MASSANUTTEN

SETTLED BY THE

PENNSYLVANIA PILGRIM

1726
OLD CHIMNEY

Standing over a Vaulted Cellar opposite Lick Branch in North Mill Creek Bend. Built by the pioneer Burner.
MASSANUTTEN
SETTLED BY THE
PENNSYLVANIA PILGRIM
1726

THE FIRST WHITE SETTLEMENT
IN THE
SHENANDOAH VALLEY

By
HARRY M. STRICKLER
DEDICATED TO

TWO OF MASSANUTTEN'S NOBLEST SONS

DR. HENRY RUFFNER

BORN 1790
ON THE HAWKSBILL

President of Washington College, Now Washington and
Lee University

Author of a Pamphlet on Slavery, 1847

AND HIS SON

DR. WILLIAM H. RUFFNER

"The Horace Mann of the South"

Author of the Present Public School System

First State Superintendent of Public Instruction in Virginia
Whose Appointment Was the Beginning of the Present
Public Free School System in Virginia

1870-1882

COPYRIGHT 1924
BY HARRY M. STRICKLER
INTRODUCTION

By

DR. JOHN W. WAYLAND

In "Massanutten" Mr. Strickler has collected and presented to his readers many interesting facts never before given to the public. With him it has all been a labor of love, for the Massanutten Country was the home of his ancestors and it is clothed in those wonders and beauties of nature that appeal to his poetic temperament. From this time on the terms, Massanutten and Shenandoah, are bound to have a richer and more vital meaning to all who read or write the history of our beautiful land.

The materials herein contained for those who are tracing genealogies are voluminous and valuable; the information given regarding early religious organizations, notably the Baptists and Mennonites, is timely and helpful; The Significance given to such names as "Tenth Legion," "Narrow Passage," and the "Old Indian Road" will appeal to every intelligent reader, whether a native son or a transient stranger. Especially the map of the original Massanutten homesteads, which has cost the maker years of research and unmeasured hours of labor, should prove of inestimable value to the student of history and genealogy.

It is such works as this that must speedily preserve the names and deeds of pioneer days or future generations will seek only in vain when they endeavor to piece out the story of their fathers. I bespeak for "Massanutten" the cordial reception which it so richly deserves.

John W. Wayland.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Topic</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Massanutten, the First Settlement in the Shenandoah—1726</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Massanutten Country</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Massanutten Creek</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Massanutten Road Over Buffalo Mountains</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indian Relics</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Massanutten—Its Meaning</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shenandoah—Its Meaning</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ye Old Indian Road</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Location of the Fairfax Line</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Processioners</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Moravian Missionaries</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peper Corn Deed</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Petition of 1733</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Massanutten Patent</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Early Massanutten Ministers and Churches</td>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>White House or Mill Creek Church</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ye Old Meeting House</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Smith Creek Baptist Church</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Silas Hart's Will</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Early Baptists in Virginia</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bread</td>
<td>49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quakers Proscribed</td>
<td>51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Waldenses</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Pennsylvania Pilgrim</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Tenth Legion of Democracy</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Swiss Guards</td>
<td>58</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Old Homes in Massanutten—Fort Cellars</td>
<td>59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sandy Hook and the Hawksbill</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flood of 1870 and Other High Waters</td>
<td>76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roads Massacre—1764</td>
<td>81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Massanutten Massacre—1758</td>
<td>83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lord Fairfax and the Northern Neck</td>
<td>90</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Lewis Surveys Fairfax Line—1746</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hebron Church</td>
<td>102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Washington Calendar—Visits Rockingham Co.</td>
<td>104</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>First Census in Massanutten—1783</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Early Deeds and Map</td>
<td>120</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Four Great Battles</td>
<td>141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tithes Abolished</td>
<td>143</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Early Tax Records</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marriage</td>
<td>146</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Names, Origin of</td>
<td>151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luray Caverns</td>
<td>172</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Formation of Counties</td>
<td>175</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oh, For The Mountains, a poem</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Illustration</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Old Chimney—Fort Burner</td>
<td>Frontispiece</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Massanutten Gap (top title page) Massanutten Pipe (bottom)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Massanutten Gap Road—Lee Highway</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Massanutten Pipe</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The White House</td>
<td>37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ye Old Meeting House—Mill Creek</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miss Selina Strickler</td>
<td>45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Locust Grove—Fort Massanutten</td>
<td>61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fort Long—Home of Philip Long</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Massanutten Mill</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Egypt House—Fort Egypt</td>
<td>88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fort Burner—Old Chimney</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fort Roads—Hope Farm</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fort Stover</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Bloody Ford</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fort Roads Interior</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Old Bible Published in 1536</td>
<td>161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Old Bible—Frontispiece</td>
<td>163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Skeleton Gorge—Luray Caverns</td>
<td>174</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
MASSANUTTEN OF THE SHENANDOAH

Shenandoah is a beautiful Indian maiden. Her name is Indian, too. It means "The Daughter of the Stars." Her beautiful head rests on Massanutten's noble peak, and her graceful feet are forever bathed in Potomac's refreshing waters. About her neck in sweet embrace clings a string of pearls, sparkling and dancing in the sunshine; they sweep over her shoulders, join below her waist, and are lost in the Potomac at her feet.

Massanutten, what shall I say for you? Ah! you, too, are a beautiful maiden. You live in the garden of Shenandoah. How natural it was for the first settlers to admire you and love you at first sight, as the Indians did long before, put their arms about your slender waist, and settle down there to stay!

And so those brave pioneers did settle at the waist of Massanutten, just where Massanutten is the smallest, and this settlement is the most interesting in the Valley of Virginia and one of the most interesting in the State.

First here lived the feathered man,
In this land he camped and ran,
Happy this his hunting ground,
Type of life beyond the mound.

MASSANUTTEN

THE FIRST SETTLEMENT IN THE SHENANDOAH VALLEY
DATE 1726

Massanutten should be represented by a five pointed star as it was the beginning of no less than five counties. When that little band of Swiss and German pioneers pushed a hundred miles into the wilderness, a hundred miles beyond the outposts of civilization, into a country inhabited only by red Indians and wild animals and pitched their tents and built their cabins by the sparkling waters of Massanutten Creek they laid the foundation stones of five counties, whose territory reached to the uttermost limits of Virginia, even to the Great Lakes. If you should ask a Page County man where Page County had its beginning his answer
would be at Massanutten; although Page was actually established in 1831, a hundred years later; if you should desire to know where Augusta County was born you will find that it was born at Massanutten; if you would seek the birth place of Frederick County you will find it at Massanutten; if you want to know where Shenandoah County first saw the light you must say at Massanutten; and since it was a Massanutten settler who located the first home in Rockingham County it can truthfully be said that it also had its beginning at Massanutten!*

In 1607 Virginia had made a beginning at Jamestown. One hundred and twenty-five years later those settlers had made no settlements beyond the Blue Ridge.

In 1682 William Penn came to America to establish his Holy Experiment. From Switzerland came kindred spirits to assist in this great and glorious work. They did not speak Penn's language. They were not of his nationality, but they were Penn's brothers in spirit and were deeply interested in making his experiment a living reality. Prior to 1730 some of these Pennsylvanians came into the beautiful valley of the Shenandoah and made the first settlement at Massanutten in Page County, then Spotsylvania, later Orange, later Augusta, later Frederick, later Shenandoah, and lastly Page.

The date of this settlement is 1726 † Some of these early settlers may have traded with the Indians there shortly after Spotswood's expedition in 1716. We learn that his expedition created considerable interest in the territory west of the mountains. This was certainly the first settlement in the upper Shenandoah. There were about this time some settlements being made in the valley near the Potomac, but even these were later than 1726, with the possible exception of the settlement of Morgan Morgan at Bunker Hill, which was made in 1726 or 1727. Even this settlement was not earlier than the Massanutten. While the Massanutten settlers, some of them at least, were doubtless at that point before 1726,

* Stover, the Swiss land agent, located 5,000 acres in Rockingham County when he located the Massanutten Patent.
† From a recent issue of the Page News I learn from an article over the name of Rev. Martin Luther Peter, pastor of St. Jacob's Lutheran Church, Smithfield, Pa., that John Roads and others had forwarded a letter to the Government at Williamsburg, Va. in regard to land prior to 1727. It is not dated but it was in the hands of the authorities in 1727. This letter is on file in the State House in Richmond.
(Page News, Sept. 9, 1924.) Rev. Mr. Peter is a direct descendant of John Roads and Abraham Strickler.
we have written evidence that at least one of them was there in 1726.*

**THE MASSANUTTEN COUNTRY**

Massanutten is the name of the mountain range that sits serenely in the centre of the Shenandoah Valley, but originally this name belonged exclusively to a spot at the base of that mountain, and this is the Massanutten to which I will now direct your attention.

Massanutten is not the name of a town but of a beautiful section of Page County, Virginia, lying between the Massanutten Mountain and the Shenandoah River, a few miles to the north of the Fairfax line and immediately east of a gap in the said mountain known as the New Market Gap. An imaginary line drawn east from New Market across the mountain and thru the gap to the river would very nearly divide Massanutten into two equal parts. In going from New Market to Luray over the highway that passes through the gap, one is afforded a magnificent view from the top of the mountain of the Massanutten Country as well as of a large portion of Page County stretching out toward the Blue Ridge. The view east of the river at this point includes the territory drained by the Hawksbill and Mill Creek, eastern branches of the Shenandoah, and comprises probably half, if not more, of the better lands of Page County. If the above imaginary line were extended to the Blue Ridge, it would approach the well known resort known as Skyland or Stonyman on top of the mountain.

The Shenandoah River in Page County flows in a north-easterly direction along the eastern base of the Massanutten Mountain, describing on its way a series of graceful curves. As it approaches the Massanutten Country, it hugs the base of the mountain south of the gap, but immediately sweeps out into the valley, only to return again to the mountain to the north of the gap, completing an irregular semi-circle embracing a large extent of fertile level river bottom lands—roughly speaking about 2,500 acres. This bend is easily distinguished from the other bends in the river, as it does not approach a point, as most of them do, but the river flows almost straight northeast for about two miles at this point.

MASSANUTTEN CREEK

A small clear stream, called Massanutten Creek, rises in the gap and flows east through the Massanutten country to the river, dividing the territory into about two equal parts. It was on the banks of this stream that many of the first settlers built their homes. The homes of at least four, Benjamin and Isaac Strickler, Brubaker and Stone, were built on the stream within a short distance of each other.

Originally the name Massanutten was applied no doubt to a larger scope of territory. Jacob Stover's lower 5,000 acre patent, which reached from Alma to the mouth of the Hawksbill on both sides of the river, a distance of ten miles or more, was referred to in the early days as the Massanutten patent.

On a map published in 1796 I find that the river in Page is designated "Massanutten's or South Branch." This map is bound with the Heads of Families.

Massanutten was an important name in the early history of the Shenandoah Valley. It was one of the first place names. In 1746 the gap now known as the New Market gap was known as the Massanutten gap for the reason that New Market was not then in existence. The Massanutten then was known as the peaked mountain, no doubt from the prominent peak near Harrisonburg.* It was also called Buffalo Mountain on the early records. Afterwards the name Massanutten was attached to the entire range which extends from Harrisonburg to Strasburg, a distance of fifty miles.

When those Swiss pioneers located at this spot they found scenery not unlike their own beautiful Alps in Switzerland, not so sublime probably, not so awe-inspiring perhaps, beautiful scenery nevertheless—"God-like scenery for God-like men for God-like purposes." The scenery is too beautiful, and too much like Heaven must be to be described by the most facile pen. So I will not attempt it, but advise you to go and see it for yourself. See the beautiful curves on the road across the Massanutten—see the blue mountains to the east billowy as the ocean—see the Alleghanies in the west rise to the realms of snow—see the Shenandoah roll in the vale below and see the beautiful daughter of the stars stretch east and west on either hand. It is the garden of Paradise—it is a lit-

*Thomas Lewis' journal kept on the survey of the Fairfax line in 1746. Lewis calls the mountain "Peaked Mountain."
MASSANUTTEN 9

tle part of Heaven sent down. Go up on Peaked Mountain near Harrisonburg, stay up there until the shades of night cover the landscape and see the lights of twenty cities from Winchester to Harrisonburg appear like balls of fire up and down the Valley. This sight is worth a trip from Europe.

THE MASSANUTTEN ROAD OVER BUFFALO MOUNTAINS
(Now the Lee Highway)

When the first settlers came to this section and for some time afterwards, the mountain that towered above them evidently was not known by the name Massanutten but by the name of Buffalo Mountain. On the 26th of June, 1740, Abram Strickler and others presented a petition to the County Court of Orange for a public road from Smith’s Creek over the “Buffalo Mountains” to the mouth of “Massanuten” and thence over the Blue Ridge to Mr. Thornton’s Mill. The petition was granted, and Abram Strickler and Philip Lung (Long) were ordered to lay off and supervise the construction of the road.*

This road, no doubt, passed over the Blue Ridge through Thornton’s Gap, and its route was very probably along that of the present New Market-Sperryville Pike, which passes through Massanutten, crosses the river at the White House and continues on through Luray to Sperryville, east of the Blue Ridge, on Thornton’s River in Rappahannock County. This road has been known as the Lee Highway since about 1920.

This road evidently was one of the very oldest roads in the valley and doubtless crossed the Hawksbill at Luray, but that town was not then in existence. It is interesting to note that this creek that flows thru Luray was known as the Hawksbill as early as 1733.†

Adam Miller is now conceded to be the first white settler in the Shenandoah Valley.‡ He located near Massanuten in

† See Massanuten Patent.
‡ Wayland’s Ger. El., p. 37, and Hist. Rock Co., p. 25. Miller during the very first years of the Massanuten settlement moved up the Shenandoah and made the first settlement in what is now Rockingham County.
1726, as shown by his naturalization certificate. Abraham Strickler and other Swiss settlers came with him to the Valley, no doubt, as they purchased land from Jacob Stover, the Swiss land agent, at the same time in the same locality, and joined in the same pe-

MASSANUTTEN GAP ROAD
Lee Highway a mile from the top on east side of mountain. This is one of the oldest roads, if not the oldest, of record in the Valley of Virginia. Laid out in Orange 1746. The cliff in the center is Falling Spring Mountain.

ition in 1733 to the Governor of Virginia for the purpose of having title to lands purchased from Stover confirmed.

As the name Massanutting Town was so early applied to the place, the supposition is that it was an old Indian trading post long before the first settlers purchased land there. This might
explain why William Beverly, on April 30, 1732, wrote to a friend in Williamsburg asking him to secure for him a grant of 15,000 acres "including a place called Massanutting Town." Beverly also refers to it as an "Old Field," which indicates that there were no trees on the land. Probably the entire river bottoms were devoid of trees. Kercheval, in his history of the Valley, says that great areas of the valley were covered with grass when the first settlers arrived. John Lederer, a German explorer, visited the valley in 1669 and drew a map of it, marking the valley "Sevanac," meaning prairie. (Wayland's Rock. Co. Hist., p. 33; Wayland's Ger. El., p. 17).

It is quite likely that the first settlers made many trips to the Massanutten country before deciding to locate. They doubtless hunted and traded with the Indians whom they found there.

The descendants of Abraham Strickler once had in their possession a very old paper, known as a trader's pass, that enabled Abraham to pass to and fro between Virginia and Pennsylvania with furs and skins. In 1744 Abraham Strickler brought suit against one Pendergrass for twenty-two pounds and ten shillings, the price of three hundred pounds weight of good merchantable deer skins. This suit was concluded at Winchester but was started in Orange County. * Abraham Strickler was one of the first settlers and united in the petition of 1733.

The government of Virginia offered inducements to any one who should locate Indian towns west of the Blue Ridge and established trading relations with the red men, giving them a monopoly on such trade for a time.

INDIAN RELICS

I am inclined to believe that there was an Indian town at Massanutten when the first settlers arrived. It would seem that more Indian relics are to be found in this neighborhood than in any other part of Page County, and more in Page County than in any other County in the Valley, certainly more than in Rockingham, Augusta, or Shenandoah. Indian arrows are to be found now and then throughout the Shenandoah Valley, but not in such large numbers as at Massanutten.

Kercheval speaks of many evidences of Indian villages in the Shenandoah Valley. In Page County he says that there were in

1830 remains of Indian mounds on the south fork of the Shenandoah and on the Hawksbill. He speaks of one a few miles above Luray on the west side of the river on the Widow Long's place. His exact words are:

"Three large Indian graves, ranged nearly side by side, thirty or forty feet in length, twelve or fourteen feet wide, and five or six feet high. Around them in circular form are a number of single graves. The whole cover an area of little less than a quarter of an acre. They present to the eye a very ancient appearance, and are covered with pine and other growth."

He mentions another on Noah Keyser's lands near the mouth of the Hawksbill which was found to be literally filled with human skeletons. He states that on the lands of John Gatewood are the signs of an Indian village. Kercheval devotes considerable space to the subject of Indian relics in Page. (Ker. p. 39, 3d Ed.)

Elder R. T. Strickler who lives in Egypt has hundreds of Indian arrowheads of all descriptions that he picked up in that section. He also has several Indian hatchets. He had one very large one which he gave to Mr. Walden of New Market who has a collection.

**THE MASSANUTTEN PIPE**

He still has a very large Indian hatchet which he found on his farm. It weighs four and a quarter pounds, is eleven and three quarter inches long, and the blade is four inches wide while the other end approaches a point. Mr. Strickler has an old ten plate stove still in use, made by the Isabella Furnace with this inscription on the end: "John McDowel fecit."

Mr. J. W. Ruffner, who lives in the brick mansion on the left bank of the river just north of Egypt, several hundred yards north of the mouth of Lick Run, has a perfect stone pipe which was found on his farm. It is made of some soft black stone. The hole is there in the stem attached to the bowl as it was originally made. Mr. Ruffner told me that John Ruffner built the brick house in

---

*Evidently the home of David J. Strickler, "Hope Farm", where Roads was killed.*
which he lives in 1838, that his father Reuben Ruffner preceded him in the possession of this old home. The pipe was found on the farm by Reuben Ruffner in 1888. This pipe is not unlike a Quaker hat. Probably the Indian who made it endeavored to simulate the hat of his friend, William Penn.

On the hill back of Egypt is an old Indian grave or mound. It is almost opposite the mouth of Mill Creek. I have been told that it was ten feet high probably fifty years ago. The Smithsonian Institute opened the mound some years ago and took away some Indian relics I have been told. The mound is easily seen today, the earth being thrown around in a circle. Pine trees ten or fifteen feet high are growing on the spot now. Mr. Lee Strickler tells me that after the floods of 1870 and 1877 he found quite a number of what he called Indian hearths or sand stones shaped like the bottom of a kettle about six or eight inches in diameter; that he plowed up some rather nice mud pots that would hold a gallon or more, also a stone pipe stem, with bowl broken off. At one time, I am told, every house in the neighborhood of Egypt and Massanutten had many Indian relics. Mr. Strickler tells me that he found more evidences of Indians from the upper end of Massanutten to the mouth of the Hawksbill than in any other part of the County. There are a great many arrow heads to be picked up on the opposite side of the gap on Smith Creek also.

MASSANUTTEN AND SHENANDOAH

THE JEWEL THAT DECORATES THE BROW OF VIRGINIA

Massanutten—Its Meaning

From an article appearing in the Daily News-Record of November 23, 1921, by L. J. Heatwole, of Rockingham County, I learn that Massanutting (now Massanutten) is composed of two Indian words, "Massa," meaning "ground," and "Nutta" or "Nuga," meaning "Potato," the combined word, therefore, meaning Potato Ground. This is consistent with the condition in which the early settlers found this land. Mr. Heatwole states that he obtained this information from a special work issued by the U. S. Government Printing Office entitled "Origin of Some Place Names In the United States," by Henry Garnett. This is the most plausible explanation of the name that I have heard.

I have read somewhere that Massanutten meant Great Lookout Mountain, being an Indian name. But this could hardly be
true since the mountain was not known as Massanutten. The earliest names for the mountain were Peaked or Buffalo Mountain. I am of the opinion that the name Massanutten refers to the broad expanse of river bottom, that seems to have borne the name from the very beginning. While the name—potato-ground—is plausible I am not sure that the American Indian at this time was cultivating the potato. The potato has a remarkable history and authorities on this subject might be able to throw light on the subject.

It is conceded, I believe, by historians that Massanutten is an Indian name but may it not be a Greek or Latin word given by the early settlers? Mesopotamia is made from two Greek words: meso, meaning middle or between, and potamia, meaning river, hence land between the rivers. The early records seem to favor Mesanutten instead of Massanutten, that is “e” is preferred to “a” in the beginning of the name. In Abraham Strickler’s deed it is spelled “Mesenutten” (according to Wayland), and the Moravian missionaries use it twice in 1748 and spell it once Mesanothen and once Mesanoten. Could this name have been given to this place by some of the early settlers? Could it mean “Land between the mountains” or “Middle land”? In western United States a great many places are known by names beginning with “Mesa” which is Spanish for table. Mesa Verde means green table land, Mesa Grande, the great table land. Some day some one may discover the true meaning of Massanutten. At present it seems to be in a cloud of doubt.

Shenandoah—Its Meaning

In this same article there is an explanation why the Indians called this river the Shenandoah—the Daughter of the Stars. One of the main branches of the Shenandoah heads at Gilmer Spring, the head of Skidmore Fork, high on the Shenandoah Mountain due west of Harrisonburg. Mr. Heatwole states that this is the highest head spring of the Shenandoah. Near this point are the head waters of the North Fork of the Shenandoah, which flows out of Brocks Gap and joins the South Fork at Riverton. The river, as it were, comes down from the stars—hence “The Daughter of the Stars.” The Indians were a poetic people, more so than we. Their names all indicate that they were. There is still more truth in this name than beauty. We of this age go rushing by and see neither the beauty nor the truth. How symbolic is the automobile of this restless age. We get into an automobile or a Ford, whiz down the road and pass by thousands of beauty spots without
seeing them. We go too fast to see the beautiful. The Indian knew how to enjoy the beautiful. He tarried and lingered by the laughing waters.

Neither do we see the truth in the name. Surely this beautiful Shenandoah comes down from above, down from the stars. The rain and the sunshine come down from above. What would these hills and meadows be without the rain and the sunshine! Then again every noble aspiration, of those who dwell amid these beauties, comes down from above, every noble deed and thought, every good thing. The same Great Spirit that inspired the Red Man inspires the White Man. If the Indian had a noble inspiration, that inspiration came from the same source as our inspiration. Did he have a noble inspiration? I am sure he did. I have read that he did not know how to tell a falsehood, that he was temperate, that he would not steal, that these sins he learned from the White Man. However that may be, we know that he lived near enough to God (the Great Spirit) to preserve his temple in which he lived on this mundane sphere in beauty and strength, such as we do not have.

Massanutten and Shenandoah

These two names are inseparable. They form a jewel, a cameo, and Massanutten is the figure in the cameo.

Surely this land was born from above
Born for life and born for love,
Made by the Hand that made the stars
Made for man and not for Mars.

And yet this jewel became a bone of contention, between the North and the South, and the Valley became a sea of blood, a veritable battlefield from end to end. It was crushed between the upper and nether mill-stone. But the sacrifice has been made, love has replaced hate, and the jewel rests again serenely on the brow of Virginia, in greater splendor than ever before. May it not only be a jewel but a golden cord of friendship and brotherly love, between North and South, for here the Pennsylvania Pilgrim met Cavalier and lived in harmony years before the struggle.
The first settlers probably followed the Indian trail of the Five Nations on their way to the south. It was known in 1744 as "The Great Road from the Yadkin River" (in North Carolina) thru Virginia to Philadelphia, a distance of 435 miles. In territory now embraced in Rockingham County it bears this designation: "Indian Road by Treaty of Lancaster." At the time of the Treaty of Lancaster (1744) this road seems to have passed thru the Massanutten country, and later was moved further west and passed up the valley on the west side of the Massanutten Mountain. At the treaty of Albany in 1722, the Indians agreed to move their road to the west side of the Blue Ridge, after which time, no doubt, it passed thru Massanutten.

In 1746 when Thomas Lewis, one of the surveyors who ran the Fairfax line in that year, arrived at a point just south of New Market, one mile and 561 feet west of Smith Creek, he marked the place "Indian Road." The distance between the Indian Road and the Shenando River was one mile and a half lacking two feet. The first line made by the surveyors in 1746 was at this point about a mile north-east of the one above referred to. They ran a line from the head of Conway to the head of the Potomac on a bearing N. 41 & 2-3 W. and having missed their point on the head of the Potomac, corrected their bearing to S. 46 E. and returning from a stone (Fairfax Stone) which they planted at the head spring, they missed their starting point on the Conway about 100 yards.

I understand that there is a map in existence which shows that the Indian Road forked at Strasburg, one trail leading up the east side of the Massanutten and the other on the west side.

This great highway was afterwards designated by various names as: "The Great Road", "the Pennsylvania Road", "The

* This designation is found on Fry & Jefferson Map, 1755, bound in the book; "Christopher Gist's Journal." Pa. Mag.
† Thomas Lewis' Journal made in 1746.
‡ The old Indian Road evidently left the present Valley Pike at Tenth Legion and went by Keezletown returning to the pike between Harrisonburg and Staunton, near Mt. Sidney. This was early known as the Keezletown road.
** I understand that Mr. Chas. E. Kemper discovered this map.
†† On an old patent of 135 acres of land surveyed in 1763 for John Grattan there is a road described crossing the river designated the "Pennsylvania Road." This was evidently on the river at Mt. Crawford, in Rockingham County. This indicates that the road was much used by the Pennsylvania pilgrims. Patent Book O, p. 29.
Stage Road" and in the south-west I think this same trail was called the "Wilderness Road". Finally it was called the Valley Pike or Pike. The states of Kentucky, Tennessee, Missouri and others were settled by pioneers who passed over this old Indian trail. Many heroes have been served by "Ye Old Indian Road". First came the red man, then the pioneer, then hosts of heroes; Washington, Lee, Jackson, Taylor, Houston, Lincoln, Morgan, Muhlenburg, Banks, Shields, Fremont, Early, Ashby, Sheridan, McKinley, Wilson, Breckinridge, Sigel, Sevier, Boone, Lewis and Clark, George Rogers Clark, and doubtless many others, as well as the hosts that followed them, all of whom were heroes. *

The road which we call the Valley Pike should be called "The Old Indian Road." It is one of the most if not the most historical road in the United States. The struggle along its length during the Civil War alone makes it the most historical road in the Country, not to mention the many other historical features. It should be so called from Philadelphia to the Yadkin River, N. C. †

I am not a poet but here is a try at it.

YE OLD INDIAN ROAD

Down thru the vale of the Shenandoah
Winds a road blazed long ago—
Blazed by the Indians on their way
From the frozen North to the Southland gay.

Many heroes have passed this way
From times of yore to present day,
From the song of the arrow and the bow
To the throb of the motor on the Shenandoah.

Hear her tell her wondrous story
How she served this land of glory
Served good Peace and served old Mars
Served the Daughter of the Stars.

*I have been told that there was evidence of an old Indian trail leading up the steep bank on the east side of the river in Egypt near Massanutten.
†Here is evidence consistent with the above treaties. I understand that Mr. Chas. E. Kemper has discovered a map of early date showing the Indian Road dividing at Strasburg, one branch passing up the south branch and one up the west side of Massanutten.
First there came the feathered man
'Long this road he camped and ran
Happy this his hunting ground
Type of life beyond the mound.

In his footsteps came hoards of men
From the woods of William Penn
From beyond the Susquehannah,
Quaker, Reformed, and Covenanter.

Came into this Land of Paradise
That Freedom's banner might arise
Friends of Menno, friends of Luther
All down the Indian road to boost her.

Many, many creeds, but all were friends,
Those who settled these river bends.
Penn's experiment did not fail
A holy task that did prevail.

Now these braves and bold pioneers
Lived in harmony for many years,
Moved by the spirit of the just
In the pipe of peace to trust.

Surely this land was born from Above
Born for life and born for love,
Made by the Hand that made the stars
Made for man and not for Mars.

But White Man's machination
Stirred a world war agitation,
And the struggle of Fifty-six
Made the valley a river of Styx.

From that day hence I have been
Daily in the service of white men,
I've served the doughty Daniel Boone
In his coat of deer and cap of coon.
I served the founder of Tennessee,  
For John Sevier patronized me.  
I have served Washington and Lee  
And many other heroes of the free.

Muhlenberg and Morgan, in their day,  
And Lincoln and McKinley, passed this way.  
That Democracy might not fail  
Woodrow Wilson was born on my trail.

John C. Fremont, of California fame,  
Banks and Shields into the Valley came.  
You all know what happened then,  
They turned and marched right out again.

Erect in saddle, plume in air,  
Stuart moved like some phantom rare.  
I've heard the hoof-beat and the rattle  
As the gallant Ashby rode on to battle.

For days and nights I have been  
Pressed by the feet of Jackson's men,  
Shuffle, shuffle, shuffle-shuffle on  
Thru the long night to early dawn.

Over there Breckinridge and Sigel met  
Where Fame crowned the V. M. I. Cadet.  
At Cedar Creek Jubal A. Early won  
Until Sheridan said: "Turn, boys, turn."

Yes, I've borne the wheels of strife,  
But I'd rather serve the peaceful life.  
In joy I carried the emigrant wagon  
But groaned under war's hoary dragon.

Down thru the vale of the "Shenando"  
Winds a road blazed long ago—  
Blazed by the Indians on their way  
From the frozen North to the Southland gay.
Mr. Philip M. Kauffman, who lives at the Kauffman mill in White House bend, wrote me, in a letter under date of 1914, that the present line known as the Fairfax line, once the dividing line between Rockingham and Shenandoah Counties, but now wholly in Page County, crosses the river about two miles south of Alma. He says: "I stood on the high bluff (1914) on the western bank of the river a few hundred yards above Newport where some of the fences on either side of the river still show the line. A big white oak on the bluff, said to be a line tree, was cut down recently but the stump remains, also a part of the trunk."

There seems to be no doubt that this is the location of the line. The early deeds of the first settlers in the neighborhood of Massanutten proved very confusing until I drew a map of the Stover Massanutten patent of 5,000 acres and definitely located it on the river. The southernmost limit of the patent was at Alma on the right bank of the river, two miles north of the Fairfax line, and the southernmost limit on the left bank was still further north, about three miles from the Fairfax line. The nearest point of Massanutten Creek was at least four miles north of the Fairfax line.

Therefore the Massanutten tract of 5,000 acres was wholly north of the Fairfax line, its northernmost limit being at the mouth of the Hawksbill Creek. It extended on both sides of the river from the mouth of the Hawksbill south-westerly, a distance of ten miles, to the mouth of Stony Run which enters the river near Alma.

The first settlers, of course, intended to locate south of the Fairfax Dominions since their patents were from the Colonial Council and not from Lord Fairfax.

Massanutten was in Spotsylvania County when the first settlers located there, later in Orange, then in 1738 that territory of Orange County west of the Blue Ridge was divided into two counties, Frederick on the north and Augusta on the south. The records were not actually kept in Frederick until 1743 and in Augusta until 1745, so these are the true dates of the establishment of these two counties.

Here are confusing points. Where was the dividing line between these two counties? What relation did it bear to the Fairfax line? When was the Fairfax line run? And where was it run? Was Massanutten in Frederick County or Augusta County? Did George Washington run the Fairfax line? These are some
questions that gave me considerable difficulty in answering. I have answered them correctly, I think.

The dividing line between Augusta and Frederick when the counties were first established was in the neighborhood of Woodstock, Va. The true Fairfax line was run in 1746 and crossed the Shenandoah River several miles south-west of Massanutten. Massanutten was first in Spotsylvania County, then in Orange, then in Augusta, then in Frederick, then in Shenandoah and lastly in Page. Massanutten therefore was the foundation stone of four counties, viz: Augusta, Frederick, Shenandoah and Page, and incidentally a fifth, Rockingham, since Adam Miller of this settlement laid the corner stone for Rockingham. George Washington did not run the Fairfax line.

In 1753 the line between the Counties of Augusta and Frederick was made identical with the Fairfax line. Prior to that date it was north of the Fairfax line. In 1738 when the Counties of Augusta and Frederick were established, the dividing line was designated as running from the head-waters of the Hedgeman River to the head-waters of the Potomac. In 1744 an Act was passed, providing that Augusta should pay her share of the cost of running the line between the Counties, and the Act recites the fact that Frederick had employed a surveyor to do the work. It was probably run that year.

It has always been supposed and so accepted by historians that the Fairfax line and the line between Augusta and Frederick were identical. While this was true after 1753, before that time the dividing line was evidently further north but not actually run until 1744. This supposition proved confusing until I discovered these facts.

The whole of the Massanutten patent was in Augusta County, apparently, until 1753, when it became a part of Frederick County and wholly in the Northern Neck after that line was definitely established in 1746.

The line between the Counties was probably thirty miles north of the Fairfax line from 1746, the date when it was established, until 1753. The Hedgeman River flows from the eastern base of the Blue Ridge about thirty miles north-east of the Conway River and about ten miles north-east of Thornton's Gap, according to a map dated 1796 and bound with the "Heads of Families." On this map Germantown is located on the Hedgeman River, above the mouth of Thornton's River. I find practically the same map bound with "Jefferson's Notes on Virginia," labeled "Samuel Lewis' Map—1794."
The Hedgeman is now the southwest boundary line of Fauquier County, but modern maps do not carry the name.

When Hampshire County was established in 1753, the Act provided that that part of Augusta County within the Northern Neck should become a part of Frederick County and that part of Frederick County lying westward of the Great North or Cape Capon Mountain should become Hampshire County. This circumstance proves positively that the Fairfax line was not identical with the line between Augusta and Frederick Counties prior to 1753.*

Before I discovered these facts the whole Massanutten settlement was in confusion. Now all records in all the counties, at any time covering the Massanutten country, are in harmony with these findings. In the absence of these facts Dr. Wayland was led to conclude that Mathias Selzer, since he was a justice of Augusta County in 1751, lived southwest of the Fairfax line. He may have lived southwest of that line in 1751 but not because he was in Augusta County, as all Massanutten was at that time in Augusta County, and northeast of that line. †

THE PROCESSIONERS

In 1746 the first Vestry of Augusta County, consisting of twelve men, were elected by the Freeholders and Householders, called to the Court House by the Sheriff for the purpose. On September 3, 1747, the Vestry appointed two processioners in each locality or precinct. The law at that time provided that every four years the processioners should mark the boundaries of the lands of each person.

From the names of the processioners and of the localities mentioned in the order, I am of the opinion that the following were appointed for territory on both sides of the Fairfax line.

“Robert Cravens and Thomas Harrison, from Samuel Wilkins' line to the South Mountain;
“Daniel Haldman and John Riddle, from Fairfax's line to the Narrows and across to the North Mountain;
“Mathias Selzer and Abraham Shickler (Strickler evidently), from Fairfax's line to the extent of the County between the two mountains;

*Hening's Statutes, 1736, p. 514; 1738, pp. 79-80; 1744, p. 275; 1753, p. 376.
"Daniel Harrison and Morgan Bryan, from Samuel Wilkins' to the Great Plain to Lord Fairfax's line, thence with the said line to Henry Smith's; 

"John Denton and Abraham Collet, from the Narrows to the extent of the County from mountain to mountain."

Mathias Selzer and Abraham Strickler are known to have lived in Massanutten and the designation of their precinct could only mean from the Fairfax line northeast to the line between the counties. This territory evidently comprized all of the Massanutten patent and probably extended beyond many miles.

The "Narrows," I take it, refers to the place known today by the name of Narrow Passage near Edinburg, Shenandoah County. If this be true Augusta County probably extended as far as Woodstock. (Augusta County Vestry Book pp. 1-4, Chalkley Papers p. 432).

The last item would indicate that Augusta went some distance beyond the Narrows.

The Narrows or Narrow Passage takes its name from the narrow strip of land between the river and the creek over which the road at this point passes. Hundreds of people pass over this natural wonder daily without knowing that it exists. It has long been a landmark of note.

In 1753 the Moravian Brethren passing south, evidently along the Old Indian Road, mentioned the "Narrow Passage" and Stony Creek, evidently the same place bearing the name Narrow Passage to this day. (Wayland's Hist. Rock. Co. p. 49).

In 1758 some of the Massanutten settlers journeyed to Winchester to vote for George Washington for the House of Burgesses. He was elected and thus Massanutten assisted him in starting on his matchless career.*

MORAVIAN MISSIONARIES VISIT MASSANUTTEN IN 1749

BRETHREN SCHNELL AND BRANDMUELLER

These missionaries kept a diary of their travels and a table of distances along their route from Bethlehem, Pa., their headquarters. They visited Massanutten on December 6, 1749. "On De-

* Four, at least, of the Massanutten settlers, Jacob, Joseph, Benjamin and John Strickler, voted for Washington on that eventful day.
cember 6th we came to Mesanoton. We staid with Philip Long who had his own religion. I intended to preach, but he would not let us have his house, assuring us that none would come, since Rev. Mr. Klug had warned the people to be on their guard against us. They fared better at Adam Mueller's home where they preached. He lived near Elkton. Klug was a Lutheran and served the far famed Hebron church in Madison County.

Their table of distances from Staunton to Capt. Jacob Funk's is as follows:

(From N. Bell—Staunton) To Franciscus at the Soud *
  Schanathor (a short distance below Port Republic) 30 miles
  To Matthias Schaub (Swoop) ...................... 4 miles
  To Adam Mueller (just below Elkton) and back again
    across the river ............................. 8 miles
  To Philip Lung and Mesanothen (Fort Long) ...... 16 miles
  To Captain John Funk (Singers Glen, probably) .... 20 miles

The same missionaries speak of the Narrows. Franciscus lived on Stover's upper patent evidently, in the neighborhood of Port Republic.

I here give the opening part of the deed from Fairfax to Isaac Strickler. The land conveyed is located on the left bank of the river near the White House and in Massanutten on Massanutten Creek and was a part of the original Abraham Strickler tract known later as Egypt.

Deed from Fairfax to Isaac Strickler March 2, 1762

The Right Honorable Thomas Lord Fairfax Baron of Cameron in that part of Great Britain called Scotland, Proprietor of the Northern Neck of Virginia. To all to whom the present writing may come sends greeting. Whereas Isaac Strickler of the County of Frederick, having represented to my office that he is in possession of a certain parcel of Land being part of a Tract of 5000 Acres granted to Jacob Stover by Patent date the 15th day of December, 1733, 1000 of which the said Stover sold & conveyed to Abraham Strickler, dec'd. who by his last will & Testament devised the same to be divided among his several sons as may fully appear by the Record of Orange County Court, and the said Isaac having moved for my Deed to include his part or Dividend of

the said purchase as his property by Discent from the said Abra­
ham”, etc. The deed conveys 183 acres, which is about one-fifth
of the 1000 acres conveyed to Abraham. The deed was “Registered
in the Proprietor’s office in Book K, folio 289.”

The original of this deed is in the possession of Mrs. Virginia
Milbourne, of Charles Town, W. Va., a descendant of Isaac
Strickler. This deed is interesting from several standpoints. It
states that Abraham Strickler left a will and that it was recorded
in Orange County. I have never been able to find this will record­
ed there. When Peter Ruffnough qualified as Administrator in
Augusta County Court on April 16, 1746, one of the requirements
of the Court was that the administrator should ascertain whether
or not the deceased, Abraham Strickler, left a will.

This was a deed evidently to remove a cloud from the title of
this land. Abraham Strickler had purchased his land in Orange
County from Jacob Stover, the Swiss land agent, who had obtain­
ed his title from the Colony of Virginia. When the Fairfax line
was definitely established in 1746 this land was on the Dominions
of Fairfax. I find that Fairfax made deeds to the several sons of
Abraham Strickler for the same land that Abraham purchased of
Stover at Massanutten.

No doubt similar transfers were made by Fairfax to other
parties in this neighborhood for like purposes.

Isaac Strickler built the combination stone fort and dwelling
in Massanutten still standing (1924). This mansion was built on
the land conveyed in the above deed.

Fairfax reserved in his deed the annual fee rent of one shilling
sterling money for every fifty acres to be paid on the feast day of
St. Michael the Archangel.

“Peper Corn Deed”

In 1754 Fairfax conveyed land to Michael Coffman, on behalf
of the orphans of Martin Coffman, dec’d. “reserving the yearly
rent of one peper corn at the feast of St. Michael the Archangel.”
This might indicate that Fairfax had a kindly feeling toward or­
phans, since his yearly rent is so small.*

In 1744 Abraham Strickler is prosecuting a suit at Winches­
ter in Frederick County. This might be explained by the fact that

* Fairfax deeded Spring Farm, one mile east of Luray, to the same orphans.
This was a rectangular tract 340 by 189 poles. The “Peper Corn” tract occupied the
toe of Fairfax Bend.
the records did not begin at Staunton in Augusta County until 1745. In 1746 his inventory is filed at Staunton. From this time until 1753 the Massanutten settlers are found transacting business at Staunton. Then after 1753 we find them on the records at Winchester.

Martin Kaufman of Massanutten died in 1749 and his will was recorded that year at Staunton, in both German and English. We learn from his inventory that he was a minister. Among the many articles mentioned are: a minister’s gown, many sermon books, Bibles, a silver watch, wigs, shoe buckles, woman’s English hunting saddle, ten small books called golden apples* and many other articles. He had no less than nine books of sermons all by different authors.

When the first settlers located at Massanutten that territory was in Spotsylvania County; then, in 1734, it was embraced in the new County of Orange, which included, besides territory east of the Blue Ridge, all the territory in Virginia west of that mountain, and extended northwest to the Great Lakes—“the utmost limits of Virginia.” In 1738 this territory west of the Blue Ridge was divided into two new counties, Frederick and Augusta, the dividing line being identical with the present (1921) line between Rockingham and Shenandoah Counties, known as the Fairfax line after 1753. The records were not kept in these counties, Frederick and Augusta, until 1743 and 1745, respectively. In 1772 Shenandoah County (Dunmore until 1777) was carved out of Frederick just north of the Fairfax line, and in 1778 (date of Act. 1777), Rockingham County was carved out of Augusta County, just to the south of the Fairfax line. Then in 1831, the Massanutten Country was included in the new county of Page. Spotsylvania was formed in 1720.

THE PETITION OF 1733

Adam Miller and His Seven Friends

In the early part of the year 1733 Abraham Strickler, Adam Mueller (Miller), Mathias Selzer, Philip Lung (Long), Paul Lung (Long), Michale Rhinehart, Hans Rood, and Michael Kaufman

---

*The German is "Golden Apfel in silbern Schalen" which interpreted is: "Golden Apples in Silver Shells." This is taken from the passage found in the old Bible: "Words fitly spoken are like apples of gold set in pictures of silver." It is a collection of best passages in the Bible. I understand that a few of these books are extant. (From the address of Bishop L. J. Heatwole at the unveiling of the Roads Memorial, August 31, 1924.—Page News, Sept. 9, 1924.)
joined in a petition to Governor Gooch for a confirmation of title to their lands purchased of Jacob Stover. It seems that Beverly* claimed the lands known by the name of Massanutting which Stover sold to them and that he had brought suit to oust Stover from possession of them. The original petition is still in existence, on file in the State Library at Richmond. The petitioners signed their names in German. For the original of this petition, see Palmer's Calendar of State Papers, Vol. 1, pp. 219, 220; for a discussion see Va. Hist. Mag., Vol. XIII, No. 3, Wayland's Ger. El., p. 35, also Hist. Rock. Co., p. 35.

A Copy of Petition of 1733 †

To the Honble William Gooch Esqr. Lieutenant Governor &c &c.,

The petition of the subscribers humbly shew—

That about four years past, they purchased five thousand acres of land, of one Jacob Stover, and paid him a great sum of Money for the same, Amounting to Upwards of four hundred pounds: that yr: petitioners were informed & believed the sd: Stover had a good right & title in the said land—that immediately after the sd: * * * * all their lands & sevll other things in the County of Lancaster & Province of Pennsylnavia, where they then lived, & came & seated on the land they had bought of the sd Stover; and cleared sevl Plantations & made great Improvements thereon—Since which, they have been Informed that the sd: land (known by the name of Massanutting) is Claimed by one William Beverly Gent—& that the sd: Beverly hath brought suit agst the sd: Stover for the same, in the Honble the Generall Court—Yr Petitioners further shew that should the sd: Beverly recover the sd: land, that he will turn yr: Ptrs out of Doors, or oblige them to give much more for their lands & plantations than they are worth. Which will entirely ruin yr: Petrs And yor Petrs. cannot recover anything of the sd: Stover, to make them amends for the Loss of their sd: lands, plantations &c, he being very poor, and is Daily Expected to Run away. Wherefore yr: Petitioners humbly hope that as they are not Privy to any fraud done by the sd: Stover in obtaining the sd: Land & yor petrs being Dutchmen & not ac-

*Beverly's provisional grant was dated May 5, 1732; another order of the Council dismissed it on Dec. 12, 1733. The petitioners state that they had been on these lands for four years making their original settlement 1729 or 1730. Adam Miller states that he had been here as early as 1726 or 1727 in his naturalization papers. This petition is copied in full in Wayland's Ger. El. p. 35.
†Wayland's Ger. El. p. 35.
quainted with the laws here concerning lands & Imagined the sd: Stover's right to be good & have Run the hazard of their lives & estates in removing from Pensylvania to the sd: land, being above two hundred miles & at a time when there was very few Inhabitants in them parts of Shenando, & they frequently visited by the Indians. And at this time yr petrs have nine Plantations, fifty one people, old & young, thereon & Expect to have two more familys to seat on the sd: land this spring, (none of which are any of the persons the sd: Stover swore was on the sd: land when he obtained the sd: Patent as yr petrs have been informed) nor did yr petrs hear of the sd: Beverley's claiming the said land 'til they had made plantations thereon—And yr petrs have also paid his Majesties Quit rents for the said land, ever since they bought the sd: land of the sd: Jacob Stover, that your Honrs taking all & Singular, the premises into yr: Consideration, will be pleased to make such order or Decree thereon, that yr: petrs may Quietly Injoy the said land,

And yr: petr will every pray &c

MILHART RANGDMANN

The following names are signed to this petition; Adam Mueller, Abraham Strickler, Mathias Selzer, Philip Lang (Long) Paul Lung (Long), Michael Rinehart, Hans Rood, Michael Kaufman. Abraham Strickler signs first.

This is a very interesting document. The petition states that they have nine families and fifty-one people settled on the Massanutten lands, that two more families will settle thereon in the spring, and that they were on the land when Stover obtained his patent, which fact Stover did not disclose when he obtained his patent, that they came from Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, two hundred miles distant, and had made great improvements on the land, and that they had paid quit rents on the said land ever since they purchased it of Stover.

Stover was evidently the agent for these petitioners. Whether Stover on his initiative or on that of the petitioners entered into negotiations for these lands is not clear, but I am inclined to think that Stover was merely the agent for these parties. He no doubt was acquainted with the English language and better equipped to enter into negotiations with the authorities at Williamsburg. And it is likely that there would have been no trouble if Beverly had not filed a claim for the same lands.

It has been suggested that Stover named horses, cattle, dogs and chickens as persons already located on the land. I do not
know from what source this information is derived. His patent recites that “For and in consideration of the transportation of one hundred persons to dwell within this our Colony and Dominion of Virginia whose names are” then he names one hundred persons. It is not clear whether this consideration on the part of Stover had at the time of the sealing and signing of the patent been fulfilled or was to be fulfilled. I think that Stover agreed to transport 100 persons after he obtained the patent. These names which he gives are familiar Lancaster County names, and it may be that he had consulted them on this subject.

Strange to say he does not mention any of the petitioners’ names. This circumstance indicates that he probably was endeavoring to oust them. The petition states that fifty-one persons are on the land. This is half of the required number. So when he obtained his patent he could have placed the names of the fifty-one Massanutten settlers in his patent. It may be that it was not his intention to mention those already there, as the government was acquainted with this fact, but to mention only those whom he intended to transport and settle on the upper 5,000 acre tract. It may be that the scrivener made a mistake and placed the names in the lower patent intended for the upper patent. *

Beverly’s Caveat Dismissed

Beverly’s CAVEAT against Stover was dismissed on December 12, 1733, Stover’s grants were confirmed, and three days later patents were issued to him for 10,000 acres in two tracts. Two years later to the very day, on December 15, 1735, Stover executed deeds to five men, Henry Sowter, Abraham Strickler, Ludwick Stone, John Brubaker, and Mathias Selser for ten tracts of land aggregating 3,400 acres. Strickler received 1,000 acres at “Mesenuttin on Gerundo.” His deed is the only one that contained this expression, and this would indicate that his tract was in the heart of the settlement. † It will be noted that only two of the above, Abraham Strickler and Mathias Selzer, had signed the petition of 1733. The other petitioners probably became discouraged and gave up their rights or sold out to other parties before deeds had been executed to them. The Court records of Orange County disclose the fact that Abraham Strickler and Stone had litigation with Stover between 1734 and 1739. It may be that the other

---

* But he names 100 other persons in his upper patent for which see pp. 30-31.
† It is found in the middle of the patent. See map.
petitioners anticipated litigation and settled on other lands, probably on the other side of the river, outside of the Massanutten tract of 5,000 acres.

Stone's first purchase from Stover amounted to 1,100 acres. The greater part of this he sold to Michael Kauffman, Martin Kauffman, and Michael Cryter, in 1735 and 1736. In 1737 Stone purchased the balance of Stover's Massanutten patent estimated to be 1,050 acres, all on the east side of the river, his first purchase being on the west side. Strange to say, Stone had deeded the second purchase to Philip Long more than nine months before he obtained his deed from Stover. The number of the deed book, however, would indicate that Stover sold to Stone in 1735 or 1736 and that the date is a mistake. Another peculiar circumstance is that Stover sold 550 acres of this second purchase to Christian Clemon in 1735. This is evident from the boundaries given.

So we see that two more of the petitioners of 1733, Long and Kauffman, obtained part of the 5,000 acre patent from Stone. Another, Hans Rood (John Roads) was living on the patent when he was killed by the Indians.

MASSANUTTEN PATENT
1733

Jacob Stover's Patent for 5,000 acres.*

George the Second &c. To all &c. Know ye that for divers good causes and Considerations but more Especially for and in Consideration of the Transportation of one Hundred persons to dwell within this our Colony and Dominion of Virginia whose Names are Susannah Sowder, Rachel Sowder, Jacob Calman, Barbara Calman, Stofie Calman, Matthew Calman, Peter Calman, Rodolph Calman, Jacob Calman, John Calman, Isaac Calman, Joseph Calman, Abraham Calman, Rudy Calman, Susanna Calman, Claplir Calman, Catherine Calman, Barbara Calman, Rachel Calman, Henry Calman, Catherine Calman, Isaac Calman, John Calman, Peter Calman, Abraham Calman, Matthew

* Stover obtained from the Colonial Council a grant for 10,000 acres on June 17, 1730. The other 5,000 acres he located up the river twenty miles or more below Port Republic, in Rockingham Co.
Calman, Rudy Calman, Christian Calman, Henry Calman, Dorothy Calman, Rachel Calman, Barbara Calman, Sarah Calman, John Hear, Christian Hear, John Hear, Joseph Hear, Isaac Hear, William Hear, David Hear, Peter Hear, Paul Hear, Rodolphi Hear, Dorothy Hear, Rachel Hear, Susannah Hear, Barbara Hear, Catherine Hear, Christian Hear, Susannah Hear, Isaac Hear, Abraham Hear, Peter Hear, John Hear, Jacob Hear, Christopher Hear, Henry Hear, Claplir Hear, Jane Hear, Barbara Hear, Anna Hear, Rachel Hear, Catherine Hear, Jacob Funk, Dorothy Funk, Hansrudy Funk, Stapler Funk, Peter Funk, Stoſle Funk, Isaac Funk, John Funk, Abraham Funk, Sarah Funk, Catherine Funk, Susannah Funk, Hurshel Funk, Anna Funk, Barbara Funk, Eliza Funk, Martin Kindick, Rachel Kindick, Peter Kindick, Claplins Kindick, Stapher Kindick, Nicholas Kindick, Isaac Kindick, Abraham Kindick, Joseph Kindick, Catherine Kindick, Rachel Kindick, Barbara Kindick, Susannah Kindick and Dorothy Kindick. WE HAVE given granted and confirmed and by these Presents for us our Heirs and Successors do give grant and Confirm unto Jacob Stover One Certain Tract or parcel of Land Containing Five Thousand Acres Lying and being in St. Marks parish in Spotsylvania County on the west side of the great mountains on the Second Fork of Sherrando River and bounded as followeth (to wit) BEGINNING at two red Oaks one white Oak a Hickory and Dogwood on the Lower end of the Lowgrounds above the mouth of the Hawks Bill Creek over against a High round top’d mountain and runeth thence South Forty Degrees east Forty pole thence South Thirty five Degrees West Fifty pole thence North Fifty Eight Degrees West Forty pole to the River thence up the several courses of the river to three White Oaks thence South Twenty two Degrees, West One Hundred and Forty pole to three white Oaks thence South Fourteen Degrees East One Hundred and Thirty pole thence South Sixty one Degrees West One Hundred and Ten poles to three red Oaks by the River thence up the Several Courses of the said River to a red and white Oak and Dogwood thence South Nine Degrees West Two Hundred and Seventy pole to the mouth of a Lerge Run thence up the Several

* Hear was probably a misspelling of Herr. The Swiss patent for 1000 acres on Pequea Creek, Lancaster Co., was made to Hans Herr and Martin Kundig. They were leaders of the flock. (Kuhns p. 47.) All these are familiar Lancaster County names. The names in the patent doubtless include father and mother and their children. It was not unusual for a family to have 12 or 15 children at that time. John Hite of Rockingham Co. had 21 children.
Courses of the River to two Red Oaks thence South Twenty Degrees East One Hundred & Forty pole to two red and a white oak thence North Eighty Degrees East Sixteen pole to two white oaks thence South Sixty Degrees East Forty Eight poles to three white oaks thence South thirty degrees East Twenty poles to two pines thence South Twenty five Degrees West Seventy Eight poles to two red Oaks thence South Sixty Degrees West Fifty Pole thence South West One Hundred and Forty pole thence South Fifty Degrees West One Hundred and Six pole to the River thence up the Several Courses of the said River to a red Oak over against a small naked Island Thence South Thirty Degrees East thirty pole to two red & two white Oak Saplins thence South ten Degrees East three Hundred and Sixty pole to three white oak Saplins thence South West One Hundred pole to three white oaks thence South East One Hundred and Sixty pole to a red and two white Oaks thence South West One Hundred pole to two white Oaks thence South thirty-five Degrees West One Hundred and ten pole to a red and white Oak and Hickory on a run thence down the Several Courses of the said Run to the River thence down the Sevl. Courses of the said River to a poplar Elm white and red Oak below an Island in the River at the upper end of the Mesenitto thence North Fifteen Degrees East Four Hundred and Eighty pole thence North Eighty Degrees East three Hundred and Thirty pole thence North Nineteen Degrees East One Hundred and Ninety pole to a white Oak thence North thirty Nine Degrees East Five Hundred and Twenty poles to three pines thence North Sixty Degrees East One Hundred and Twenty pole thence South Eighty two Degrees East One Hundred and Sixty pole thence South Sixty Eight Degrees East One Hundred and Sixty pole thence North Forty Eight Degrees East One Hundred and Fourteen pole thence North One Hundred pole to a red Oak Dogwood and Ash thence North Forty three Degrees West One Hundred and Eighty pole to two white Oaks thence North Seventeen Degrees East One Hundred and twenty pole to three white Oaks thence North thirty five Degrees East Twenty Eight pole North Sixty Degrees East Fifty two pole thence East Sixty pole thence South Forty Six Degrees East Eighty pole to two black walnuts thence North Twenty three Degrees East One Hundred and Eighty pole to two white Oaks & a Hickory thence North ten degrees East One Hundred pole thence North Seventy five Degrees East one Hundred and fifty poles to two white Oaks and a Hickory thence East Sixty four pole to three white Oaks thence South Sixty Six Degrees
East One Hundred and Thirty pole to two Hickorys thence North Seventy Eight Degrees Degrees East One Hundred and Ten pole to the River over against the mouth of the Hawksbill Creek thence over the said River and up the Several Courses of the same to the beginning WITH ALL &c.

To have hold &c. To be held &c. Yielding and Paying &c. Provided &c. In Witness &c. Witness our Trusty and Wellbeloved William Gooch Esqr. our Lieut. Governor and Commander in Chief of our said Colony and Dominion at Williamsburgh under the Seal of our said Colony the Fifteenth day of December One Thousand Seven Hundred and Thirty three In the Seventh Year of our Reign,

William Gooch.

Land Office, Richmond, Va.

I hereby certify that the foregoing is a true copy from the records of this office.
Witness my hand and seal of office, this the 3rd day of July, 1922.
(Signed) Jno. W. Richardson.
Register of the Land Office.

I here give a list of the deeds whereby Stover conveyed his Massanutten tract of 5000 acres in Orange County to the various parties. The numbers of the deeds refer to the numbers on the map which I have prepared. All are on the left or west bank of the river except the last three which are on the right bank. *

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Grantee</th>
<th>Tracts</th>
<th>Total</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>D. B.-P.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Stone</td>
<td>400-400-300</td>
<td>1100</td>
<td>Dec. 15, 1735</td>
<td>1-200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Selzer</td>
<td>200-200-100</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>Dec. 15, 1735</td>
<td>1-203</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Prupecker</td>
<td>300-200</td>
<td>500</td>
<td>Dec. 15, 1735</td>
<td>1-206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Strickler</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>1000</td>
<td>Dec. 16, 1735</td>
<td>1-210</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Sowter</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>300</td>
<td>Dec. 15, 1735</td>
<td>2-213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Clemon</td>
<td>550</td>
<td>550</td>
<td>Sep. 16, 1735</td>
<td>1-152</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Stone</td>
<td>1050 (remainder)</td>
<td>1050</td>
<td>Nov. 24, 1737</td>
<td>1-190</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total 5000

All of the above deeds give boundaries which are identical with the Stover patent lines, except the deed to Stone for 1050

*In the early deeds the left bank is referred to as the north side of the river and the opposite side as the south side.
acres which simply states that it conveys the remainder of the Stover lands. The above deeds call for all the patent lines except as follows: lines (s to v) opposite the mouth of the Hawksbill, left bank of river, the three short lines above the mouth of the Hawksbill on the right bank of the river (A to D) and the straight line across “North Mill Creek Bend” (I to J). Letters in parenthesis refer to map.

In 1737 Stone conveys 800 acres in Long Bend and 205 acres in “South-east Bixler’s Ferry Bend” to Philip Long, totalling 1005 acres. The deed for 800 acres gives the same boundary lines that are contained in the deed from Stover to Clemon in 1735 for 550 acres. From this it will be seen that Stover conveyed Long Bend (Fort Long tract) to Stone two years after he had conveyed it to Christian Clemon.

There is a chancery cause, Stone et al. v. Stover, on record in Orange County which explains this discrepancy. Stone’s partners were: Abraham Strickler, Mathias Selzer, Frederick Stone, John Brubaker, and John Stickly. Their petition states that Stover had agreed to convey to them 5000 acres, that he had conveyed 4,000; that he refused to convey 1,000 acres to Philip Long, that he had given a penal bond for 500 pounds, and that he had persuaded Abraham Strickler, who held it, to give it to him while Stone was absent in Pennsylvania. Stover claimed that the quantity of land was 3,100 acres and the price 250 pounds. It will be noted that the first four deeds above total 3,100 acres. The suit was dismissed June 23, 1737. The deed to Clemon was probably set aside by this suit. Anyhow, the same land shortly thereafter was conveyed to Stone, who in turn conveyed it to Philip Long.*

As the total above contains a duplicate of the 550 acres, this leaves that amount unconveyed by Stover, so far as my records go. It may be that he conveyed this to other parties before he conveyed the remainder to Stone in 1737. †

Stone conveys the following tracts which contain the same boundaries as found in the deeds to Stone above:

---

† It may be that there is a mistake in the boundary lines in the deed for 550 acres to Clemons.
Stone was evidently the agent for the other settlers for the purpose of receiving the deed from Stover.

Some of the parties to the chancery suit are different from those in the petition of 1733. They are:

Names in the Petition of 1733 | Names in the Chancery Suit
---|---
Abraham Strickler | Abraham Strickler
Mathias Selzer | Mathias Selzer
Adam Mueller | Frederick Stone
Philip Long | John Brubaker
Paul Lung (Long) | John Stickley
Michael Rhinehart | Ludwig Stone
Hans Rood |
Michael Kaufman |

Strickler, Stone, Selzer, Kauffman, Long, and Brubaker are found on the Massanutten patent before 1740. Rood was living on the patent at the time of the massacre. Mueller, we are told, afterwards located higher up the river. In 1738 Stover conveyed 400 acres to Peter Bowman, the tract whereon Stover then lived. This was evidently on his upper tract, below Port Republic.

**EARLY MINISTERS AND CHURCHES**

Most of the early marriages in the vicinity of Massanutten were performed either by Rev. John Koontz or by Rev. Anderson Moffett. *

Moffett was for nearly seventy years the pastor of the Smith's Creek Baptist congregation, Shenandoah County, Virginia. He was imprisoned in the Culpeper jail for preaching as a Baptist, and while there was almost suffocated by the fumes of burning red pepper and sulphur. He was the son of Henry Moffett, b. 1705, who located on Carter's Run, Fauquier County. The above in-

* Only four dissenting ministers of each sect were permitted to celebrate matrimony in each County. Hening's Statutes.
MASSANUTTEN

formation was obtained from Taylor's Virginia Baptist Ministers, page 83.

The Smith’s Creek church was located at New Market. John Koontz and Martin Kauffman labored together on the other side of the Massanutten Mountain and served the old Mill Creek congregation.*

WHITE HOUSE OR MILL CREEK CHURCH

In 1770 Rev. John Koontz, at that time living near Front Royal, journeyed to the neighborhood of Mill Creek where his brother George lived and began to preach the Gospel. He established a Baptist Church, gathering most of his converts from the Mennonites who abounded in the neighborhood. † Martin Kauffman, who was one of his first converts from that faith, became a preacher and did much to spread the Baptist religion in this section of the State. The Mennonites became alarmed, we are told, and sent to Pennsylvania for preachers to come among them and stem the tide, but apparently their efforts were of no avail, for the whole community gradually became Baptist. This church was first called the White House Church after the well known landmark, a dwelling still standing in that vicinity. ‡ The church was known as the Mill Creek Church as early as 1809, the name being taken from the stream by that name that flows north thru the village of Hamburg and enters the river opposite Egypt. The old meeting house still (1921) stands in Hamburg. The congregation has built a handsome brick structure just south of Hamburg, on the Lee Highway.

* John Koontz died in 1832, aged nearly 100 years. (Pittman’s “Biographical Sketches of Baptist Ministers.” Koontz died 1831. Mill Creek Church Minute Book. Rev. Anderson Moffett died in Rockingham County, May 14, 1835, at the ripe old age of nearly 89, having preached for 70 years, and, with the exception of a few years, he had served the Smith Creek Congregation during this period. (Semple’s History, p. 250. He was great-uncle of Rev. John Moffett who was assassinated in Danville, Va., Nov. 11, 1892.)

† Martin Kauffman died in 1805.

‡ White House may have been the name of Martin Kauffman’s Church. This house was likely used very early as a Mennonite meeting house and afterwards as a Baptist meeting house. The White House bend was owned by Martin Kauffman, the first. He, or one of his sons, evidently built the White House. There will be more light on this church further on.
There is evidence of some very rough treatment having been given the Rev. John Koontz, he having been sorely beaten on several occasions by ruffians of the neighborhood. There is no evidence, however, that the Mennonites resorted to any violent means to retard the progress of the Baptists, but on the other hand there is abundant proof that they flocked to their standard in great numbers. Apparently the entire Mennonite population became Baptists. There is hardly a Mennonite to be found in the entire County of Page today, altho great numbers of the most substantial and prominent families bear the names of Mennonite ancestors. The Mennonites were looked upon as Quakers, because the tenets of their faith were almost identical, and they were tolerated in Virginia with restrictions. The Quakers were proscribed on the statute books as early as 1659. There was a desire on the part of the Government to have the country west of the Blue Ridge settled, and many inducements were offered for this purpose. For this reason, the authorities were more lenient than they would otherwise have been, no doubt. Many things may have entered into this change of faith, and intolerance no doubt played its part.

The change was not a great one, and no doubt many of the Mennonite principles were retained for a time by those becoming members of the Baptist Church. It was a change of name probably more than principle. There was one considerable difference, and that was in the mode of baptism, the Baptists practicing im-

THE FAMOUS WHITE HOUSE

A noted landmark just west of the Lee Highway on the right bank of the river. Built about 1760. It has a fort cellar.
mersion and the Mennonites sprinkling or pouring. The Men­nonites were essentially Baptists. It was largely their opposition to infant baptism that separated them from the established church, and their sect can truly be called the forerunner of the great Baptist movement that followed the Reformation and is represented by so many sects at the present time.

They were called Mennonites, because a priest in Holland, by name Menno, espoused their cause in about the year 1530. They might properly be called Mennobaptists, because they believed in the Baptist faith as expounded by Menno, who did not approve of the radical doctrines of the Anabaptists of the Munster rebellion. Anabaptist was a name of reproach applied to all opposing infant baptism. The ancestors of the Mennonites and the Anabaptists were of the same faith, no doubt, when the movement started in Switzerland just as the ancestors of all Protestants were once Catholics. The Munsterites became so radical that they violated some of the most sacred and fundamental principles of the Mennonites. The word Anabaptists comes from a Greek word meaning to re-baptize (the prefix ana meaning re). It was a true appellation, so far as the established church was concerned, for these re-baptizers had actually been baptized as infants. But the name was odious to the new sect since it did not recognize infant baptism as a baptism at all.

The change, therefore, from the Mennonite to the early Baptist church was not a great one. The second generation of these original settlers had apparently become Baptists, and today their descendants are found in every denomination represented in the United States.

A great many members of the Mill Creek congregation located in and about New Market and became identified with Anderson Moffett's church there. Samuel, David, and Joseph Strickler, brothers, located there about 1790.

* But the history of the Anabaptists has been written by their enemies so far as I know and it may be far from the truth.
† Gen. Jno. Sevier, the founder of Tennessee, gave a lot to the Baptist Church in New Market between 1761 and 1770, probably about 1770. (Wayland).
‡ On May 28, 1781, "Anderson Moffett, Anabist (Anabaptist) minister," was licensed to perform the function of marrying by Banns (Banns) or License in Rockingham County. (Order Book of the Court of Rockingham County). See Wayland, p. 85, Hist. Rock. Co. This circumstance I should say definitely identifies Anderson with Kauffman and Koontz and the other "Mennobaptists," or "Quakerbaptists" as we might call them, since the early Baptist church in this locality was largely recruited from Mennonites. The name "Anabaptist" must have been applied to all opposed to infant baptism.
There is an interesting Act passed in 1663 by the House of Burgesses (Hening's Statutes, p. 198 of the volume of that year,) whereby one John Porter was expelled as a member of the House because he “was too loving to Quakers and stood well affected towards them, and had been at their meetings, and was so far an anabaptist as to be against the baptizing of children.” This indicates how closely the name anabaptist was associated with the name Quaker. In 1662 the General Assembly passed a lengthy statute prohibiting the assembling of Quakers. It is highly probable that the first settlers of the Mennonite faith refrained from building meeting houses or gathering regularly for the purpose of worship on account of the above mentioned statute. If this supposition be true, it furnishes additional reasons for Rev. John Koontz' great success.

Kercheval says, speaking of the first settlers: “In what is now Page County they were almost exclusively of the Menonist persuasion, but few Lutherans or Calvinists settled among them.”

There is evidence that the White House itself was used in the early days as a meeting house and this may account for the early name of the congregation being White House. The fact that Quakers were not allowed to meet for worship in the early days may explain the reason they had services in dwellings. It is possible that Martin Kaufman held services in the White House after the division.

Joseph Strickler, one of the first settlers at Massanutten, a son of Abraham, had his hemp certified at Winchester in 1767 and the clerk made this notation: “to which being a Quaker he affirmed.” The Mennonites were often if not always referred to on public documents as Quakers, altho some of the early Acts of the Assembly of Virginia refer to both Mennonites and Quakers.

I find strong Calvinistic leanings among the Old School Baptists which, no doubt, were inherited from the Mennonites, they being well acquainted with the teachings of Calvin who labored in Switzerland. The Protestant population of Switzerland was either Reformed or Anabaptist, the most of the latter having been driven out during religious persecutions, a great many of them coming to Penn's Colony in America. Many of them probably had been members of the Reformed Church before embracing the Anabaptist faith. Zwingli of Switzerland is usually considered

*Miller and Long of the first settlers were Lutherans and Selzer was also in all probability a Lutheran; the others were likely Mennonites.
the founder of the Reformed Church. He was the forerunner of Calvin. This movement was also the forerunner of the Calvinistic Church in Scotland where it was called the Presbyterian Church.

The earliest minutes of the Mill Creek church extant are dated Aug. 18, 1798. Here is a copy of the oldest recorded minutes that I have been able to find.

"August the 18 Day, 1798. Church of Christ Mill Creek Meeting held at the Big Spring meeting House after divine services the Church prosd. to Business the church agree to send Brother Coonts B. Jesse Wood as Delligates to our next Association held at Crooked Run meeting house Culpeper County

John Coonts, Moderator
Jesse Wood, Clk." *

It will be noted that the word Baptist is not used in the name above. This indicates the independence of this body of Christians and its congregationalism in organization. It was not difficult for a Mennonite to become a member of this church—Church of Christ. It would seem that Mill Creek congregation had several meeting houses. In 1825 the Mill Creek Church adopted sixteen articles of discipline. These are followed today I am informed.

In 1811 Joseph Mauck conveyed to John Brubaker a tract of land on Mill Creek reserving a lot on which was built a meeting house commonly called Mauck's Meeting House. This is evidence that the old Mill Creek building was constructed prior to 1811.

Adam Strickler writing about 1890 says; "The old chapel, now in ruins, near the Luray Mills above town, was the first church in Page." Adam further states that William Staige Marye was one of the organizers of the first Old School Baptist Church in Luray. † Marye came to Luray about 1800. I take it that Adam does not consider the chapel above as being in Luray. The old minutes are in the possession of Mr. J. A. Brubaker, the present (1924) clerk of Mill Creek Church.

* Big Spring meeting house was 7 miles north of Luray at Big Spring.
† This was evidently Mt. Camel in Luray. The chapel was at Mundellsville, a mile above Luray. Here Mundell & Marye had a store before Luray existed. Marye may have assisted in organizing the chapel at Mundellsville.
In going from New Market to Luray, over the Lee Highway, as you approach the little stream of Mill Creek that flows across the road in the heart of the village of Hamburg, if you will take the time to slow down and look to the left, there by the road side you will see a quaint old meeting house, more than a century old. It is built of logs and weatherboarded. If you will stop and enter you will see a still more quaint interior. As you enter the front door you will be face to face with a quaint little pulpit on the opposite side. On either side of the door a flight of steps leads up to a gallery at either end. From the outside you would not think that the building was constructed of logs but once on the inside the logs are all in plain view. The benches now have backs but originally they had none; the holes are there to prove that they once had two peg legs at either end. Several of them still have these ancient supports. On one bench I noticed this inscription: "S. ST. 1830". This bench has evidence that it is nearly one hundred years old.

At one side of the room is a very old stove, shaped like the ones called ten plate stoves. This stove has on it these figures and letters: "D. Pennybacker, 1799", at the top, and at the bottom, an "A" on the left of a central figure, and a "B" on the right. A
figure of a stork with a round ball clutched in one raised foot, decorates the front.*

In this little room Rev. John Koontz preached to the Massanutten flock for nearly sixty years. He died in 1832 nearly a hundred years old. The house was built between 1770 and 1800, probably, the exact date I have not been able to determine. Anderson Moffett and Martin Kaufman often preached here, no doubt, and many others. It is known as the Mill Creek Church. This congregation was originally known as the White House from the well known landmark several miles west at the river.

There is a deed, I am told, wherein Daniel Mauck conveyed this Mill Creek church lot for a union church. The date of this deed would no doubt give the approximate date of the building.

A DIVISION IN THE WHITE HOUSE CHURCH

Martin Kaufman, having first been a Mennonite, Semple says, retained most of their principles after he became a Baptist. These principles caused a division in the White House Church during the Revolutionary War, and Kaufman became the minister of a small number who did not believe in "slavery, war, or oaths." He died in 1805, and his flock drifted back into the Mill Creek and Smith Creek churches.

It is impossible to understand the Mennonite point of view on militarism without reading history and discovering the causes which impelled them to take the extreme position of non-resistance. The government of Switzerland, long a land of liberty and inhabited by as brave a people as could be found in any nation, engaged in the practice of hiring out soldiers to other nations. Their bravery was proverbial, and they were much in demand. We are told that there were no less than seventy thousand Swiss soldiers in foreign service at the end of the war of the Austrian Succession (1740) and that the same number took part in the Seven Years War (1756-63)—French and Indian War in America. Had their military service been confined to the defence of their own nation, it is likely that no objection would have been made. But one extreme always begets another. Their objection to being drafted into foreign service was certainly justified. Their position on the subject of mercenary soldiery was the same as that of all Americans from the foundation of this Republic. This was only one of the

* Pennybacker founded the furnace a mile below Luray, later known as Blackford's furnace. The stork is the patron bird of Germany.
many injustices forced upon the people during the religious wars that swept over Europe. Had the Mennonites been able to influence a majority or a sufficient number to direct the policies of the European Governments upon this important issue, at least to the extent of taking the position of not waging war except in defence of the nation actually invaded, it would have been a great step forward. I believe that if all nations would agree to wage war only after a majority of the people by their votes had expressed a desire to wage war (except in case of invasion of territory by an enemy) it would practically eliminate war. The world is sick and tired of war, but not so sick probably as it was during the wars of the Reformation. It is left for some great genius to crystalize this thought and put it into operation. It could be written on one page in the form of a treaty. Great documents are not lengthy neither are they difficult to understand.

In fact this is what the Swiss Republic has accomplished. They have a citizen army for defence only. This little nation has been a Republic for six hundred years and they have had no wars so far as I know, or at least very few, since their wars of liberation six centuries ago. There stands that matchless little republic, a land of peace, an island of refuge, in a sea of fighting humanity, a model, it seems to me for the world. Those who have descended from these Swiss Mennonites can truthfully say that they and their ancestors have lived in a republic, with the exception of the space of years from the time their emigrant ancestor landed on this continent to the Revolution, for six hundred years. Who can say that these Mennonites did not influence the Swiss government in taking the position against wars and mercenary soldiery. It is a fact of history that so many of them were leaving the country that special legislation was passed to prevent the depopulation of the nation.

THE SMITH CREEK BAPTIST CHURCH
ESTABLISHED AUGUST 6, 1756

There seems to be some confusion as to the date when the Smith Creek Baptist Church was instituted. Semple, in his History of Virginia Baptists, leaves us under the impression that Linville Creek Church was at first known as “Linville and Smith Creek Church.” However, it seems that there was a congregation at Smith Creek on August 6, 1756, the date of its organization, which was received into the Philadelphia Baptist Association Oc-
October 12, 1762, where it remained until the Ketocton Association was organized August 19, 1766, in Virginia, when it united with that Association. In the early records there is evidence that the Smith Creek Church was referred to as the church at Smith Creek, a branch of the North Shenandoah or North River of Shenandoah, leaving Smith Creek out of the name entirely.

The Linville Creek Church was organized at about the same time, and they were closely associated in their early history. The early records refer to them as the Linville and Smith Creek churches.

Semple also leaves us under the impression that the Smith Creek Church was not organized until 1774 when it was constituted from the White House Church in Page and from Linville Creek.

The Smith Creek Church did, no doubt, lag in interest and become almost lifeless before 1774. At this time the Rev. John Koontz had created great interest at Mill Creek Church, Page County, formerly the White House, which interest no doubt extended far beyond the White House Church. Especially did this revival affect the Smith Creek settlements, where many relatives and friends of the White House community lived. About 1770, Gen. John Sevier gave a lot to the Smith Creek Baptist Church. The White House Church became the foster-mother of the Smith Creek Church, we might say, altho it had been established in 1756.

So the Smith Creek Church was revived and took on new life, and it may be that a new organization was effected.*

The Smith Creek Baptist Church belonged to the Ebenezer Association, the Association, to which most if not all the Old School Baptist Churches in Page County and Rockingham County belong at present. There are several churches in this Association in Fauquier County east of the Blue Ridge. The Ebenezer church at New Market has only one member and has discontinued, but the name is carried on the Ebenezer Association. There is a Baptist Church at New Market which belongs to another Association. This church had its origin in the division of the Old Ebenezer Smith Creek Church and of course in a way is a representative of that old church. Many of the members or their parents, no doubt, belonged to the old Ebenezer Church.†

†Dr. C. O. Miller of New Market, Va., tells me that John Sevier sold land to Abraham Salvage and that a church lot was on the property.
Miss Selina Strickler who is now, 1922, in her 94th year tells me that she is the only surviving member of the primitive Baptist Church, known as the Smith Creek Baptist Church, a member of the Ebenezer Association; that she attended church in the old building at New Market when a little girl and remembers hearing Anderson Moffett preach. * Rev. Moffett served the Smith Creek congregation for seventy years. She tells me that he married many Page County couples and when he grew too old to go to Page they would come to his home; that sometimes he would meet them at the foot of the mountain where he would perform the ceremony.

She thinks that the new home of the late Dr. Driver at New Market was built on the original Baptist Church lot; that the lot adjoining this lot on the north, whereon the late Dr. Good had his home, was the lot that John Strickler, of Spotsylvania County, conveyed to Joseph Strickler, of Shenandoah County, in 1820, (Joseph was her father and John was her uncle); that the first church was built of logs, she thinks; that afterwards a frame building took its place; that there was a division in the church about

*She is not so certain that she remembers hearing Moffett preach, but she attended church regularly as a very little girl.
1895 and the majority claimed the property, sold the lot, purchased another lot across the street whereon they built a church; that they withdrew from the Ebenezer Association and formed one of their own; that she remained with the minority who continued in the Ebenezer Association; that she held services in her home as long as there was a handful; that now she is the only surviving member and that she has moved her membership to Mill Creek, Page County. She claims that the majority never did represent the Old Ebenezer Baptists, never did belong to that Association and that therefore she is the only surviving member of the Old Smith Creek Baptist Ebenezer Church at New Market. The Smith Creek and the Mill Creek Church both belonged to the Ebenezer Association ever since that organization existed. I understand that the Smith Creek Church is still carried on the minutes of the Association. *

OLD SCHOOL AND NEW SCHOOL BAPTIST CHURCHES

Wayland, in his History of Rockingham County, states that the Baptist Church throughout the South divided about 1840, on the question of missions. One wing was called Old School Baptist or Primitive Baptist and was anti-missionary; the other was called the Regular or Missionary Baptist. The latter comprise the great majority of Baptists in the south and are seldom referred to as Regular or Missionary, but simply as Baptists.

This same authority states that as early as 1743 a Baptist Church was established at Mill Creek, Page County. This information is from a paper prepared by Dr. C. S. Dodd of Singer’s Glen. My impression was that Elder John Koontz was the first Baptist in Page County. He certainly was the first to make a very pronounced movement at Mill Creek. The Funks at Singers Glen were Mennonites before becoming Baptists. So the Baptists recruited from the Mennonites in Rockingham as well as in Page. Semple states that Mill Creek was established in 1743 but he is speaking of Mill Creek in Berkeley County. From Semple I gather that Ketocton Association was the first Association of Baptists in Virginia. Most of the Old School Churches in the Valley now, I am told, belong to the Ebenezer Association. Semple may have led Dr. Dodd to make the statement that there was a Baptist Church at Mill Creek (Page County) as early as 1743.

*I understand that the last Ebenezer meeting house at New Market was a brick building. It is a pity it was not preserved.
Silas Hart, a Baptist living on Linville Creek, a native of Pennsylvania, was high sheriff of Augusta County in 1761, and senior justice of Rockingham in 1778. His will was probated in 1795, and Alexander Robinson, David Stephenson and John Smith qualified as executors with William Cravins, James Quinn, Thomas Harrison and John Wayt as sureties, giving bond in the amount of $50,000. In 1801 Hart’s executors are assessed with 704 acres of land. A clause in his will giving a certain amount for the education of Baptist ministers caused much litigation. The clause in question reads as follows:

"Item, what shall remain of my military certificates at the time of my decease, both principal and interest, I give and bequeath to the Baptist Association, that for ordinary meets at Philadelphia annually, which I allow to be a perpetual fund for the education of youths of the Baptist denomination, who shall appear promising for the ministry, always giving preference to the descendants of my father’s family."

The case, over the clause, the Trustees of the Philadelphia Baptist Association et al. v. Hart’s Executors, went to the Supreme Court of the United States and Chief Justice John Marshall decided it in 1819 against the Association. U. S. Supreme Court Reports 4 Wheaton p. 1. It was an important case on charitable trusts. From this report I learn that in 1792 the State of Virginia repealed all English Statutes: that Hart made his will in 1790; that he died in 1795; and that the Baptist Association in question had existed for many years but was not incorporated until 1797.

In 1792 Silas Hart was the only person in Rockingham taxed with a four wheeled carriage which was called a “Chatilow.” John Mackhall was the only person owning a two wheeled carriage in the County at this time.

**EARLY BAPTISTS IN VIRGINIA**

*Infant Baptism—Persecutions*

It has always been true that to preach anything different from the established church was to invite persecution. For this reason Jesus of Nazareth was persecuted. And so it has been ever since. While there were other features of the Baptists that were objectional to the established church in Virginia, it seems that their opposition to infant baptism was the pivotal point around
which the storm raged. Of course there was the idea of separation of church and state, "disestablishment."*

The first Baptist Church, or one of the first at least, in northern Virginia was established in 1743 on Mill Creek, in Berkeley County. Before 1770 the Baptists were spread over the whole country in the Northern Neck, above Fredericksburg. The Baptist preachers were treated much worse in Culpeper and Fauquier and other counties east of the Blue Ridge than in counties west of that mountain. Many of them were imprisoned but this seemed to add fuel to the flame.

John Picket of Carter's Run was incarcerated in the Fauquier County jail, where for three months he preached thru the grates.

James Madison, in letter during this period of persecution, mentions the fact that six preachers were imprisoned in the Culpeper jail at the same time.

James Ireland, once pastor of the Smith Creek Church, was imprisoned in the Culpeper jail. In fact it would seem that all the early Baptist preachers served their time in jail or were otherwise severely dealt with.

The separate Baptists were more severely persecuted than the regular Baptists, probably for the reason that they were more radical. I do not know wherein these two sects differed.

In 1790 the Baptist faith of one kind or other was sweeping over Virginia like a pentecostal fire, in spite of the persecutions. The fruits of the early Baptists are manifest today in the fact that the Baptist Church is the largest evangelical body in the State and this is true without counting all the other denominations that oppose infant baptism. The Baptists have a great history. The Anabaptists were the forerunners in opposition to infant baptism, the separation of church and state, and other important principles.

One can easily see how this preaching was offensive to those who belonged to the established church but they used the wrong method in opposing them. They used the unchristian method. But this preaching did not disturb such men as Thomas Jefferson, James Madison and Patrick Henry. They were the Gamaliels of their day. We know very little about Gamaliel but we know enough to realize that he was one of the greatest men that the world has ever known.

*Semple p. 348.
When Peter and the Apostles were brought before the Council for trial, Gamaliel, a Pharisee and a doctor of the law, stood up and said: "And now I say unto you Refrain from these men, and let them alone; for if this counsel or this work be of men, it will come to naught; But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God." *

How many of the sufferings, pains, heartaches and abuses could have been avoided had the truth expressed by Gamaliel been recognized, emphasized and adhered to down thru the ages! This expression alone stamps him with the seal of greatness. Such an expression could only have been inspired by God.

If it be possible for the departed to behold the things of this world, what a source of great joy it must be to all of those great apostles of truth and liberty to look back upon this sphere and behold the leaders of today in religious thought emphasizing the essentials of the moral code, as exemplified in the life of the lowly Nazarene, instead of wasting their energies in useless disputes and hairsplitting arguments about non-essentials and in some instances about pure fabrications.

BREAD

Our different religions may be compared to so many packages of bread. Our forms, ceremonies, and rituals are the packages or paper cartons. Our denominational names are the labels on the cartons. The nourishing power, or saving power, is in the bread, within the carton—"WHAT WE BELIEVE AND DO", every day as we go up and down in this world.

The strength and purity of the bread is tested and measured by love, the basic principle, the flour of the bread being; "Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself", moistened with the water of hope and seasoned with the salt of faith and sweetened with many spices—mercy, justice, wisdom, temperance, humility, and all the other Christian virtues.

We must not only believe in this bread but we must chew it, eat it and digest it, just as we must not only believe in food, physical bread, but we must eat it, if we would nourish our physical bodies.

*On one occasion when John Koontz was being led away to be punished, he quoted, in substance, this passage, and his tormentors, being struck with the fear of God, immediately desisted.
Plain packages may contain pure bread; while elaborate ones may not. Ritual, plain or elaborate, is the package. The nourishing bread is more than either.

Most of the religious disputes, arguments, controversies, dissensions, persecutions, wars and conflicts have been over the packages or cartons, and not over the bread within the cartons. Then Gamaliel was right. He admonished his hearers not to punish Peter for the package or label but wait and see what kind of bread he had for distribution.

Jesus of Nazareth spent his time in making bread. A great many of the church leaders have spent their lives in making empty packages, elaborate packages and useless labels.

The Apostles Creed is beautifully worded but Christ's Creed it seems to me is: "Love thy neighbor as thyself" or "Love each other as I have loved you," or as found in the Sermon on the Mount.

Only ministers of the Church of England were permitted to celebrate the rites of matrimony in Virginia prior to 1780. On that date an Act was passed allowing four dissenting ministers in each sect to obtain license to celebrate the rites of matrimony. The statute validated former marriages solemnized by dissenting ministers. It also required all persons to marry by license or thrice publication of banns, except Quakers and "Minonists" who were permitted to marry according to their custom, but the clerks of their meetings were required to transmit certificates of marriage to the clerk of the County Court, as the ministers of other denominations were required to do.*

The manner of issuing marriage license was as follows: The clerk of the Court was required to take a bond with good security from the groom in the sum of 50 pounds and to issue license and certify the fact to the first justice who was required to sign and direct the same. If the party intending to marry was under twenty-one, the consent of the father or guardian was required by his personal appearance in court or in writing under seal with two witnesses. Frequently a note or affidavit was filed with the clerk in which the parent or other person stated that the person was "upwards of twenty-one years." †

I find a statute of 1661 requiring that marriage should be performed by ministers only agreeable to the laws of England and "According to the rubric in the common prayer book." ‡

---

*Hening's Statutes, 1780, p. 362. No license or bond was required if the marriage was by banns.
† Hening's Statutes, 1748, p. 81.
‡ Hening's Statutes, 1661, p. 50.
Most of the early Germans who settled in the Valley were Rhine Germans, strongly Protestant, from the Palatinate, a very rich province. These Germans suffered terribly during the Thirty Years War 1618-1648; they suffered by the policy of Louis XIV of France 1643-1715. They suffered under the Napoleonic wars; and now again they are the chief sufferers. They like the Valley of Virginia in the Civil War are placed between the upper and the nether millstone.

Some came also from Alsace-Lorraine. This province was also on the Rhine. It has for years been a bone of contention between France and Germany. Originally it was a German province and the people are of that nationality, probably one-tenth being of French origin but a larger per cent than that no doubt speak French since it was a province of France after Louis XIV until 1870 when it was reunited to Germany. After the World War it was again transferred to France. I noticed an account in a paper recently that this province in 1924 elected a delegate to the French National Assembly with instructions to speak only the German language in that assembly. There are probably more Protestants in this province than in the rest of France. It has always been strongly Protestant. In 1681 Louis seized Strassburg in time of peace. This is the chief city of Alsace.* So an emigrant to America in the eighteenth century may have been from France and yet he may have been German in blood and he may have spoken the German language. This was true of a large number of those from Alsace-Lorraine.

THE QUAKERS PROSCRIBED

An Act for Suppressing the Quakers

"Whereas there is an unreasonable and turbulent sort of people, commonly called Quakers who contrary to the law do dayly gather together unto them unlaw'll Assemblyes and congregations of people teaching and publishing lies, miracles, false visions, prophecies and doctrines, which have influence upon the communi­ties of men both ecclesiastical and civil endeavoring and attempt­ing thereby to destroy religion, lawes, communities and all bonds of civil societie," etc.

* Joist Hite, one of the first settlers in the lower valley, was from Strassburg, then a province of France, yet he was a German. Wayland's Ger. El.
The act is lengthy and prohibits masters of vessels bringing Quakers into the colony under heavy penalties. All Quakers are to be imprisoned without bail or mainprize until they abjure the country and if they should return are to be proceeded against as contemners and if found a third time to be proceeded against as felons.

None of their books or publications are allowed and no person is permitted under severe penalties to entertain Quakers.

(Hening's Statutes 1659-60, p. 532.)

All persons were required to attend church on Sunday under the penalty of paying 50 pounds of tobacco but this provision was not to apply to Quakers or other recusants who out of nonconformity to the church totally absent themselves but they were to be punished under the Statute 23d Elizabeth. The penalty under this act was 20 pounds sterling for every month. They were fined 200 pounds of tobacco for assembling. (Hening's Statutes 1661-14 Chas. II.)

If five or more Quakers met for religious worship they were fined, for the first offense 200 pounds of tobacco; for the second offense 500 pounds; and for the third offense they were to be banished from the colony. The penalty for entertaining Quakers was 5,000 pounds of tobacco. Officers were fined 2,000 pounds of tobacco for neglect of duty in enforcing the law, half of the fine to go to the informer in all cases.

(1663-15 Chas. II, p. 180, Hening's Statutes.)

For refusing to baptize an infant the guilty party was to be "amerced (fined) 2,000 pounds of tobacco; halfe to the informer, halfe to the publique." (1662 Hening's Statutes, p. 166, 14 Chas. II.)

This act was rather a hard sentence on the Baptist as it resulted in his being both amerced and immersed.

It was not the Catholic Church that proscribed the Quakers in Virginia but the established church, the Episcopal or Church of England. It was not the Catholic Church that persecuted the Anabaptists in Switzerland, but the established church, the Reformed Church. I say this because we are inclined to consider the Catholic Church as the only church that has resorted to persecution. Wherever the church and state have joined hands to establish one church, one ritual, one form of faith, corruption and injustice have followed.

In the Palatinate the Lutherans persecuted the Reformed, and vice versa depending upon which was in power. This was
after they adopted their creeds. Prior to that they considered themselves as one church or at least so near one that there was no friction. In America we find these two denominations worshiping in harmony in the same churches. Creeds have caused much trouble. Creeds should be amended just as constitutions are amended. Not to do this stifles growth.

The Assembly of Pennsylvania, though composed of a majority of Quakers or of those who were friendly to their interests, was the first legal body of representatives that ratified unanimously the Acts of the General Congress (1775).*

During actual hostilities the Continental Congress met in Pennsylvania, except the third which met in Baltimore, December 20, 1776, and continued 75 days. The fifth Congress met at Lancaster, September 27, 1777, one day, and the sixth met at York, September 30, 1777, 272 days. The others met at Philadelphia. So the Quaker who was proscribed in Virginia laid the foundation stones and fashioned the early history of the greatest Commonwealth, in many respects, in the Union. It is truly the Keystone State. Roger Williams was banished into the woods, where he was befriended by the Indians, just because he was a Baptist. He founded the Commonwealth of Rhode Island, which became a haven for the persecuted.

We are prone to think of the Quaker as one who opposed war, oaths, tithes, and slavery, and wore a plain garb. He was this but vastly more. His influence upon this nation is not recognized. Lincoln, we are told, sprung from Quaker ancestry. The same can be said of many of the great men of the Nation. His plain dress was a rebellion against lace ruffles, powdered wigs, and much adornment, a garb which no man today would be found wearing outside of a minstrelshow or a Royal palace. We are all Quakers today in this respect, the men at least, in that our costume is sober. Recent developments indicate that we are becoming Quakers in respect to war. †

As to tithes, practically all people in the United States today are Quakers. Patrick Henry stood with them in Virginia in opposing the tithes. They did not oppose giving one-tenth of their income to the Lord. What they did oppose was the power of the established church, backed by the civil government, to reach into

* Schroeder & Lossing, p. 675.
† We are prone to look upon the Quaker and other sects as the only peculiar people. The most of the reformed sects were peculiar at one time. Nearly all opposed musical instruments in church originally.
their pockets, without their consent, and take ten cents out of every dollar and appropriate it agreeable to the wishes of said established church, whether agreeable to them or not.

We have all long since become Quakers on the question of slavery.

The Mennonites * (or Anabaptists as they were called by their enemies) in Switzerland opposed the established Church, which opposition brought down upon their heads that double headed monster, the Church and State, the thing that all liberty loving people over the broad earth today condemn. So we are all Quakers in respect to the established Church. An established church is a despotic church under whatever name or in whatever country it operates.

Then these Mennonites opposed infant baptism. This was purely a religious question. Around this question the battle waged. They had been baptized as infants but they wanted to be baptized as adults. For this they were persecuted, for this they were considered enemies of the Church. As a reproach they were called Anabaptists or rebaptizers, the prefix ana meaning re. Who would deny a person today the liberty to practise adult baptism, or who would think the less of him for believing that there is no efficacy in infant-baptism? They were the forerunners of the great Baptist movement. We are inclined to think of the Baptist Church as a church that practises immersion. But the name had its origin in the opposition to infant baptism as much as in anything else. We note the Mennonites were called Anabaptists. They did not immerse but sprinkled, just as the Reformed church did.

Some one has said: "Whether we regard them (Friends) as defenders of the liberties of the people, opposers of slavery, of oaths and tithes, of the abominations of war, the cruel treatment of the aborigines, etc., we find them everywhere in advance of their contemporaries." †

---

*Early Mennonite ministers at Massanutten were Martin Kaufman, John Roads killed by the Indians, Blasius Bear and John Heistand of Thorntons Gap. The latter is said to have issued the first known certificate of membership in Virginia to Jacob Bear who was then living in Rockbridge County, Va. a copy of which is extant. Jacob Strieklar and Peter Blosser. There is a Blosserville in Page County. He served the church at Thontons Gap and at Massanutten. (Address by L. J. Heatwole at Roads unveiling Aug. 31, 1924. Page News Sept. 9, 1924.)

† The Cables p. 72.
THE WALDENSES

The Mennonites were forerunners of the Reformation and claim to be the true descendants, spiritually, of the Waldenses, named for the founder of the sect, Peter Waldus, who, in 1180 began to instruct the multitudes in the simple faith of Christ and the Apostles. Many reformed churches claim to have descended from this ancient sect but the claim of the Mennonites, probably, is truer in that they maintained in purity the ancient faith of that sect. In 1659 Braght published a book of 900 pages in Low Dutch recounting the story of the many martyrs, entitled “Martyrs’ Mirror of the Anabaptists.” This book is usually referred to as the Martyrs’ Book. In the inventory of Martin Kaufman I find listed “a great Martyrs book.”

While many protestant denominations point with pride to the Waldenses as their spiritual progenitors they would not subscribe probably to their severe creed. It is interesting to know that protestants lived and suffered long before the reformation. Here is their creed in a nut shell.

CREED OF THE WALDENSES

“Our rules of practice were extremely austere; * for they adopted, as the model of their moral discipline, the sermon of Christ on the Mount, which they interpreted and explained in the most rigorous and literal manner, and of consequence prohibiting and condemning in their society all wars, and suits of law, all attempts to the acquisition of wealth, the inflicting of capital punishments, and oaths of all kinds.” (From an old Mennonite book published in 1838 consisting of 461 pages, (3½x5½) being a translation from the German. The front leaves are torn out and I do not know the author. It contains the Catechism of the Mennonites and their confession of faith in 33 articles, observations on predestination, baptism, etc.) The Translater adds in conclusion “How much good would result if all the different denominations who agree in the fundamental principles of Christianity, would lay aside their disputes about external things of minor importance, etc.”

We hear a great deal today about liberals and fundamental-

* Modern theological expeditions are just arriving at the Sermon on the Mount and here they find the remains of the Waldensian cabins built there a thousand years ago.
ists. Here we have a people who were more liberal than the liberalists and more fundamental than the fundamentalists. I believe in fundamental things but the Sermon on the Mount contains the fundamental things. Fundamental things are usually those things upon which we agree. If we disagree upon a proposition it is strong evidence that it is not fundamental. Many have suffered, many have died, not for fundamental things but for things considered fundamental when they were not. It is a serious thing for an individual to disregard a fundamental thing but a hellish thing to persecute an individual for his belief, even if his belief be wrong fundamentally, and if the persecuted should represent the fundamental, it is still more hellish. That was Christ on the cross.

The quiet Quaker was fundamental when he refused to persecute another for his belief. He was fundamental when he claimed the right to go about doing good, just as Christ did. We all know that the Sermon on the Mount is fundamental. We all know that it is fundamental to love God and man. These things have saved men, not the things we dispute about, not the things we differ about. Fundamental means foundation. It means essential. The foundation to the house is essential but a brass knocker is not.

**THE PENNSYLVANIA PILGRIM**

The Pennsylvania Pilgrim was considered by Whittier his best poem. Numerous Shenandoah Valley families are descendants of the Pennsylvania Pilgrim. The Pennsylvania Pilgrim did not come over in the Mayflower, but he played just as important a part in the building of the American Nation as the Pilgrim of Plymouth Rock, or the Cavalier who landed at Jamestown. It can be said to the credit of the Pennsylvania Pilgrim that he never engaged in persecution. William Penn smoked the Pipe of Peace with the Indians, and both sides kept the faith. All religious faiths were welcomed in Pennsylvania, and all lived there in peace. The Pilgrim of Plymouth and the Cavalier were both guilty of persecutions at different times.*

Francis Daniel Pastorius was the father of German immigration in America. He was the William Bradford, or the William

---

*The Swiss Mennonites have a Mayflower, the good ship Concord, a very appropriate name for these people who desired to live in concord with all peoples. There were Germans on this ship too. It was in 1683. It would be more appropriate to say the Germans had a Mayflower. This would include Swiss and German.
Penn, or the Capt. John Smith, of Germantown. He was probably the most learned of all the colonizers. He has left productions written in seven languages. He embraced the faith of the Quakers and the Mennonites and became the author of the first protest against slavery in 1688.

It was the Pennsylvania Pilgrim that made the first settlement in the Shenandoah Valley and it was largely the Pennsylvania Pilgrim that turned this wilderness into the garden spot of the world.

The Swiss first settled in 1710 on Pequea Creek in Lancaster County (then Chester), but some had arrived with Daniel Pastorious as early as 1683 and had become a part of the settlement of Germantown, now a part of Philadelphia. Therefore it is likely that the Massanutten settlers arrived in America not later than 1710 and not before 1683. *

HAIL TO POSTERITY

"Hail to posterity!
Hail, future men of Germanopolis!
Let the young generations yet to be
Look kindly upon this.
Think how your fathers left their native land,—
Dear German-land! O sacred hearths and homes!
And, where the wild beast roams,
in patience planned
New Forest-homes beyond the mighty sea,
There undisturbed and free
To live as brothers of one family,
What pains and cares befell,
What trials and what fears,
Remember, and wherein we have done well
Follow our footsteps, men of coming years!
Where we have failed to do
Aright, or wisely live,
Be warned by us, the better way pursue,
And, knowing we were human, even as you,
Pity us and forgive!
Farewell, Posterity!
Farewell, dear Germany!
Forevermore farewell!"

* Kuhns p. 47 German and Swiss settlements of Pennsylvania. The Pennsylvania Pilgrim in a broad sense included those who embraced every known Christian sect; and all these sects followed the Old Indian Road into Virginia.
From the Latin of Francis Daniel Pastorius in the Germantown Records, 1688. Prelude to Whittier's poem "The Pennsylvania Pilgrim."

THE TENTH LEGION OF DEMOCRACY

When I was a boy we received our mail at a Post Office on the Valley Pike about five miles south of New Market, in the County of Rockingham, called Tenth Legion. Jefferson was responsible for this name. It was located in the heart of that territory that Jefferson fondly referred to as his Tenth Legion of Democracy. It included the present counties of Rockingham, Shenandoah, and Page, and was solid for Democracy.

It is very plain why these people supported Jefferson, for it was Jefferson who gave them their religious freedom which they so much longed for, and no doubt the Old Tenth Legion influenced him greatly in the stand he took in regard to politics, religion, and slavery. Jefferson did not have easy sailing in those days, and every available vote was necessary to put into effect some of the most progressive legislation ever written upon the statute books of a State or Nation.

THE SWISS GUARDS

At one time all the courts of Europe apparently had Swiss Guards to guard their palaces. The Pope still retains the Swiss Guards in mediaeval costume. History tells how these guards perished, to the last man, guarding the palace of the Tulleries, August 10, 1792, during the French Revolution. Shakespeare puts in the mouth of a King of Denmark, if my memory serves me correctly, when his palace doors were being stormed by a mob, "Send for my Switzers."

As the Swiss were guards for the kings of Europe so they were guards of the American frontiers, always in the forefront, pushing into the wilderness and founding new states. Their story has never been told. They were also guards of liberty, justice and fair dealing with Indians and all men. They were guards of the Christian virtues. You can follow their trail by the Switzer barns down thru the Shenandoah Valley.
OLD HOMES OF MASSANUTTEN AND VICINITY AND FORT CELLARS

The first settlers at Massanutten lived peaceably with the Indians until the French and Indian War (1754-1763). It was during the years of this war and for several years following that the Indians, incited by the French, who often led them, committed depredations upon the Massanutten settlement and vicinity as well as upon other sections of the Valley. Kercheval says that the Stone massacre in Massanutten occurred in 1758, the year George Washington was first elected to the House of Burgesses, and that the Roads massacre occurred in 1766, altho tradition in the family says that it happened in 1764. Kercheval says that at the beginning of this war the Valley Indians, having been invited by the western Indians, suddenly disappeared beyond the Alleghany Mountains, and that "This occurrence excited suspicion among the white people that a storm was brewing in the west, which it was essential to prepare to meet." *

The Indians were not too friendly with the Virginians east of the Blue Ridge. The Indians called them "Long Knives", evidently from their experience with them. Altho the first settlement was made on the James in 1607, no settlement had been made beyond the Blue Mountains a century and a quarter afterwards, and the chief reason for this delay on the part of the Virginians was the fear of the Indians. Had John Smith and his followers smoked the pipe of peace with the Indians as William Penn did, the valley would have been settled much earlier, in all probability. The Massanutten settlers pushed a hundred miles beyond the Potomac and the frontier settlements into the heart of the wilderness, where they could expect no aid from their friends in Pennsylvania nor from the Virginians across the mountains. Why were they able to do this? Why were they not molested by the Indians? The answer is that the Indians knew that these settlers were Penn's followers, with whom they had always lived in peace and harmony. † The depth of an Indian's hatred if he hated you was only equalled by the depth and sincerity of his love and affection if he loved you. So the Indians regarded these quiet Quakers as their friends and would have fought for them, no doubt, until persuaded by the French to take up arms against them.

† The Indians did not consider the Quakers Christians since they were so kind. Indian troubles were often caused by unprincipled whites in our own colonies.
Great inducements were held out to them probably. And when Washington with his East Virginians marched with Braddock against the French and Indians in 1755, this caused the Indians, I suppose, to regard these first settlers as allies of their ancient enemies. At this time, the entire valley was being rapidly filled up with immigrants of all descriptions, some of whom probably were not so considerate of the Red Man’s friendship as were the first settlers. Some of the Indians remained friendly and all would have probably if it had not been for the French.

FORT CELLARS

In Massanutten and vicinity there are several very old homes built over what I choose to call fort cellars, places of refuge from the Indians. These homes were constructed, in my opinion, after the Indian massacres in the locality mentioned above or soon after the first depredations in the Valley. I have seen all these old homes.

ISAAC STRICKLER HOME

Locust Grove

The best preserved and most typical one, perhaps, is the stone house in Massanutten owned and occupied by the late Harvey Strickler, known when he lived there as Locust Grove. * It is located on the north bank of the Massanutten Creek in the heart of the Massanutten country. It is a few hundred yards down the stream and on the opposite side from Brubaker’s handsome brick residence (1914.) It was built by Harvey Strickler’s grandfather, Isaac Strickler. Isaac’s descendant, William Burner, lives there now. It is a two story, eight-room house, with brick gables and stone chimneys at each end. Originally, it had a story and a half annex at the east end and a porch along one entire side. The window sills are pinned together with wooden pins. During the flood of 1870 the water came within a few inches of the second story, and the occupants were removed to safety in boats.

For the most part, the walls are sound. At one corner they seem to have given away, though doubtless they could be repaired. On the chimney in the attic is painted, apparently with lampblack, a date, 1791, and some unintelligible scribbling. It looks like a

*This article was written in 1914. It is not now the best preserved. I think all these old homes must have been built about 1760.
"LOCUST GROVE"

Built by Isaac Strickler about 1760 on the left bank of Massanutten Creek in the heart of Massanutten a quarter of a mile or more from the river. In 1914 it had a perfect vaulted cellar but the front wall of it has been removed I am sorry to say. This old stone house had at one time an addition at the east end of a story and a half which added much to its beauty, and the porch extended across the entire front. This porch was carried away by the flood of 1870 which destroyed much of the beauty about the old home. Col. John Hite, son of Joist Hite, built Springdale, an elegant stone mansion in 1753, at Bartonville, Frederick County, Virginia, and near this home can be seen the ruins of a fort. There is a tradition that the Hite family was closely related to this branch of the Strickler family at this time. It is likely that Locust Grove was built about the same time as it is similar in construction. These were the very first stone mansions built in the Shenandoah Valley and were the most elegant homes then to be found, more substantial and elegant in some ways than Mt. Vernon was at this time as Gen. Washington added to and beautified this old mansion after he took up his residence there. Mr. Burner, the present owner of Locust Grove, is a direct descendant of Isaac Strickler, the builder. I hope he will keep the old house for many years. It could be made into a most elegant home as the walls are solid. I can imagine what a beautiful mansion it would be with the porch restored, supported with large white columns. This etching is from a picture made by Mr. J. D. Strickler, a direct descendant of Isaac Strickler. This is a product of Mr. Strickler's first work made ten or fifteen years ago. Mr. Strickler is the winner in world competition of the premier trophy of portrait photography "The Daguerre Memorial Institute Diamond Medal of Honor". Studio, 6008 Penn Avenue, Pittsburgh, Pa.
sentence of about a dozen words in German. The date may be
the year in which the house was built. It was, without doubt, the
most elegant and most substantial house in that community when
erected. There were very few brick or stone houses in the Valley
in 1791. The fact that it has under it such a strongly fortified
cellar would indicate that it was built even earlier than 1791. It
would be natural to suppose that these strongholds were built dur­
ing the French and Indian war (1754-63) or shortly thereafter.
Certainly by 1791 there could be no fear of Indian incursions.
Kercheval, writing in 1830, says that several stone houses were
erected which were generally surrounded by stockades, and when­
ever an alarm took place the neighboring people found shelter in
them as places of security against the savage foe. This house may
have been just such a protection for the Massanutten neighborhood
as Kercheval describes. He states that some elegant stone houses
were built prior to the French and Indian war in the lower Valley,
but he does not mention fort cellars.*

The original building measures 38x28 feet. The story and a
half annex at the east end was 19x30 or 35 feet, I am told. This
was built by John Strickler. Tradition says Isaac Strickler built
the original structure. It may be that Benjamin Strickler built
it, as Isaac seems to have come into possession of the entire Ben­
jamin Strickler estate. But I am of the opinion that this old
home is located on the 183 acre tract conveyed to Isaac by Lord
Fairfax in 1761, which fact would practically prove that Isaac
built the house.

THE FORT CELLAR

There is a cellar under the north side and east end of the
house. It is divided into two rooms. You first enter the outer
chamber which is not fortified but is just an ordinary cellar room.
From this room you enter, through a small door, an inner chamber,
—a fortified cellar or vault. It is built entirely of stone, the ceil­
ing being arched over with solid masonry. The walls are several
feet thick, projecting a few feet above the surface of the ground on
the outside. They are pierced at intervals with narrow vertical
crevices or loop-holes through which an occupant could shoot at
an attacking enemy. The loop-holes widen inwardly, affording
ample room for the gunner. There is a niche on the inside sur-

*Ker., 3d Ed., p. 50. Some of the old Hite homes are still standing near Win­
chester and are very interesting, I am informed.
face of the vault extending downward from the loop-hole to a horizontal niche in the stone affording a foot rest. This arrangement allowed the defender to stand in a slightly reclining position while on guard. I have been told that stones were kept within the vault with which the door could be closed by those taking refuge within. At present this vault affords an excellent cellar, its thick walls guaranteeing a uniform temperature. The ceiling is very high,—about eight feet, I judge, in the center of the arch.

These were the best possible places of protection against the Indians. In the event of an attack by them, the entire family, as well as friends and neighbors, could retire to the cellar where food and water were always kept. Here a few defenders could hold at bay any number of Indians indefinitely. As a rule, the Indian did not tarry long. He made quick work of what he intended doing and made his escape before he was surrounded by the whites. He would often set fire to the house, forcing the occupants to come out into the open or burn to death. These fort cellars were guarantees against such an unfortunate dilemma. Old citizens tell me that these cellars were considered fire-proof.

It may be that this stone house in Massanutten was built as a place of refuge for the entire Massanutten community.*

Some of the old fort cellars had provisions for water by an underground passage or by being built over a spring, but this one had none. It was located, however, about one hundred feet from Massanutten Creek.

THE STONE HOME

In the yard at the Brubaker home is a stone house built around a spring. William Brubaker, who lived there in 1914, told me that the Stone home was built over this spring and that John Stone was killed by the Indians at this spot. This is the man that Kercheval speaks of as being killed in 1758,† when Brubaker's home was also plundered. At present, the stone structure is being used as a dairy. It has no arched ceiling. Stone's house was probably fired, forcing him into the open, at the time he was killed and his family carried away. If his home had been provided with

---

*Locust Grove is located about a quarter of a mile from the river, on the left bank of the creek which continues in practically a straight line east to the river. Before the flood of 1870, the creek was nearer the house with a retaining wall, as at the Brubaker home above, but that flood destroyed the wall and changed the course of the creek, moving it further south of the house.

†There is every reason to believe that all these old forts were built about 1746 or during the French and Indian wars, 1756-64.
a vaulted cellar, he could have saved himself and his family, in all probability. *

FORT LONG

The old Philip Long fort across the river from Massanutten, on the right bank of the stream and not far from the southernmost limits of the Massanutten patent and a short distance north of Alma, was built in the side of a bank or rising ground that overlooks a narrow low bottom that stretches between the river and the fort. This is a large vault with a very high ceiling. At the back end and near the floor of the vault is a hole on either side of the stone wall about three feet square. These holes present a dirt surface and were evidently left there for the purpose of constructing a tunnel into the hill from the vault should circumstances ever make it necessary. A small stone house stands over the vault now but I am informed that originally there was no house over it, that the fort was entirely concealed and that a secret trap door from the top was the only entrance.

About one hundred feet north of the old vault is a stone house built on the side of the same bank above referred to. This is a story and a half house with a one room basement at the west end partly imbedded in the bank. Should a similar room be constructed under the east end it would be entirely under ground. Under this basement room is an ordinary cellar room, which originally may have been entirely under ground. A tunnel about three feet square, at least the opening in the wall of the cellar is about that size, leads from this cellar east into the hill, probably a distance of fifty feet or more, to the bottom of a well. This well is in the yard of the mansion house of Mrs. Price who now owns this farm. Mr. Charles Price, her son, who lives with his mother, and who was born and reared on this farm, tells me that they use the water from this well the year around for drinking purposes and that it is excellent water. He tells me also that when they desire to clean out the well they use the tunnel, that the bottom of the well is a solid rock bowl.

This house has all the appearances of being a very old structure and has pine holes, large fireplaces and many other quaint attachments. Mr. Price informed me that there was a date on the inside of the chimney above the opening of the fireplace but

* Stone was probably a son of Ludwick Stone, the pioneer at Massanutten, or the pioneer himself.
In 1746, Thomas Lewis of Lewiston, Rockingham County, and Peter Jefferson, father of Thomas Jefferson, surveyors on the Fairfax Line, when they reached the river, went down the stream about three miles and camped at Loung's. (Lewis' Journal kept on the occasion.) The widow of the late C. D. Price has been living here for many years. Her home is just to the right of the Stone house which has a tunnel from the cellar to the well. The vault is under the large building on the extreme right. Massanutten gap left—Kennedy's Peak right.
he did not remember it. He told me that some years ago an old log house stood a few hundred feet to the north of these stone houses, that it was torn down and the logs were used to construct a stable near the barn, that recently these same logs were sawed into lumber which was used to construct the cannery at Alma. He thinks that this was the original Long home. No doubt this is true and the stone houses with fort protection were built during the French and Indian wars.

I am inclined to believe that it was the original intention to construct a tunnel from the vault to the well also thru those openings left in the walls of the former. It may be that it was never deemed necessary to construct the fort according to the original design, the Indian wars having ceased and all fears from that quarter being allayed.

This is the most elaborate fort in the Massanutten section. It is located at the edge of the yard of Mrs. Price's home which is a fine old brick mansion, located in the center of a five hundred acre fertile river bottom farm.

"FORT EGYPT"

The Jacob Strickler Home Known as Egypt

In the midst of Egypt, hard by a cool spring, is a very large old log house supposed to have been built by Jacob Strickler. He lived there until his death, and his son John died there in 1802. It is south of a point opposite the mouth of Mill Creek. None of these old homes are more interesting than this one. The Stovers lived here after John Strickler's death. John's daughter married a Stover. The house is now owned by J. C. Burner of Luray. It is of logs and has been weather-boarded and is in a good state of preservation. In the centre is an immense stone chimney. The large beam across the fireplace, eighteen inches square, is at least ten feet long. It has other small fireplaces in it, and there are several square holes (pine holes) for pine torch lights. Several of the rooms are immense. Originally the roof was high, and no doubt the third story was used for sleeping quarters, as an excellent flight of steps leads up to this part of the house. The fort cellar is similar to the one under the stone house in Massanutten but larger and better preserved. At one time there was a stairway leading down into the outer cellar. This is a very large room, extending the entire length of the west side of the house. The south and west walls of this room are pierced with four or five loop
holes. The spaces between the girders overhead are filled with mortar so as to present a smooth surface. From this room a door opens into the vault. This room is sixteen feet long by thirteen feet wide and arched over with solid masonry, the ceiling in the middle being about seven and one-half feet high. Several iron hooks protrude from the walls as well as several wooden ones, placed there at the time the walls were built, apparently. This is an excellent cellar, dry and of even temperature. In some respects this is the most pretentious of the fortified cellars. The large chimney and fort cellar represent an immense amount of labor. The Samuel Strickler home near New Market has the same kind of floor.

The house is about 30 feet square, with an addition at the north side of more recent construction with a brick chimney.

"THE MASSANUTTEN MILL"
A sketch by the author of the pioneer mill and miller. This mill was probably used as early as 1726 by Abraham Strickler on his Egypt plantation, where it still remains.

At this old homestead is probably the oldest mill in the Shenandoah Valley a solid stone structure and in as good a state of preservation as it was when it was made. It is a solid stone bowl about as large as an ordinary wash-tub, with a small hole drilled from the bottom to the outside for the meal to pass thru after being ground by the pestle.
EGYPT, THE HOME OF JACOB STRICKLER

Son of Abraham Strickler. This log house is built over a vaulted cellar or fort. This Fort, the Roads Fort and Stover Fort are all well preserved. This Fort cellar has an outer and an inner cellar, both fortified and well preserved. Here I find a stone mill used probably by Abraham Strickler, the pioneer, as early as 1726.
Until a few years ago there was another very old log house standing in Egypt near the old home above referred to. It was smaller and probably of older construction. Mr. J. C. Bowers told me that when he tore it down he found in it a brick with the figures 1705 upon it. This may have been the home of Abraham Strickler, the first settler, and the date may have referred to the time when he came to America. I have been told that it had puncheon floors, that is, slabs with smooth surface up. This old house was probably built before the Indian raids as it had no fort cellar.*

Just to the north of Massanutten and on the same side of the river is Egypt. Roughly speaking, we might say the north gate is at Lick Branch, while the southern gate may be considered as being where a small stream comes down from the mountain and enters the river where it approaches the mountain. But Mr. Lee Strickler tells me that Egypt extended up into the lower part of Massanutten Bend, that the dividing line was a straight line, leaving the river some distance above the White House and running straight toward the mountain to a place called “Crater Hollow” about a mile north-west of Salem, and that the large body of land located just south of the White House bridge, whereon Abraham Strickler, Sr. lived, was always considered as being in Egypt. He also says that the northern limit of Egypt went beyond Lick Branch to a point south of J. W. Ruffner’s brick mansion. These limits of Egypt are consistent with the lines of Abraham Strickler’s first grant. His line starts four or five hundred rods (320 rods equal one mile) up the river from the White House, then it runs N. 30 W. 414 rods, then runs almost due east, N. 80 E. 144 rods, then by a short line to the river, then down the river to a point where the river approaches the mountain, then it runs N. 39 E. 520 rods to the river, near Lick Branch, then N. 60 E. 120 rods, then N. 82 E. 20 rods, then N. 17 W. to the river, then up the river to the beginning. These lines take in lower Massanutten Bend and all of Egypt, extending 120 rods beyond Lick Branch. Very early Abraham Strickler called his grant Egypt, and this explains why Egypt was considered as extending up into the Massanutten Bend and beyond Lick Branch.

THE OLD BURNER HOME FORT CELLAR

Proceeding down the left bank of the river from the old house in Egypt we approach the mouth of Lick Run (Probably Elk Lick

* It may even be discovered that he was here as early as 1705.
at one time). At this point we can see a large white chimney standing across the river over against the foot of a high hill and at the edge of a narrow bottom not so far from the right bank of the stream and opposite the mouth of Lick Run. Around the base of the chimney are the walls and the vaulted cellar that once supported a log house, which, I am told, was torn down about 1910. This was the old Burner home. The chimney stands there today as a monument to the sturdy manhood that built it. I have been informed that the flood of 1870 invaded this old cellar. This old...
home was known later as the J. T. Rickard home. Joseph Burner who married Ann or Mary Rhodes, daughter of John Rhodes, killed by the Indians, lived here very early. His son, James R. Burner, father of many of the Burners in Page, lived here still later.

The Burner family should preserve this chimney as a monument to their first ancestor. It is also of historical value to all citizens. Here the fort can be seen in a way that it cannot be observed where the superstructure still remains. It should be repaired at places with cement mortar. It will only be a short time until such relics will be all lost.

The outer cellar room is across the entire width of the house facing the river. It measures inside, 24x14x8 feet and the walls are at least two feet thick. From this room there is a door leading into the vault. This vault is under one fourth of the chimney. There is a small hole above the vault door, presumably for ventilation, and there seems to be a passage leading from this hole up into the chimney. This would indicate that this hole was also used as a pine hole. The dimensions of the vault are 11 feet long, 9 feet wide and 7 feet high in the centre. It is not as large as some of the others but the outer cellar is larger.

The log over the fireplace is 20\(\frac{1}{2}\) inches wide and 13\(\frac{3}{4}\) inches thick. Its length is 11 feet and 1\(\frac{1}{2}\) inch. The fireplace has been partially closed but originally it was 8 feet wide and about as high as my head. There is a hole in the back of the fireplace four feet from the hearth and leading back into the massive chimney for two feet or more which I take to be a pine hole. The old chimney looks like a pharos with an offset at each floor. I would certainly like to see this preserved as a monument to that pioneer who built it. I understand from Mr. Wm. Lee Strickler of Washington State that the old Burner burying ground is at the upper end of the bottom and that he can remember when the stones were there. A tablet could be placed on the stone to the pioneer who is buried in the nearby grave yard and to any others who may be known to be buried there.

There is an interesting story in connection with the pioneer Burner. "Mr. Burner brought with him from Germany all the money he possessed, and, as banks and safety vaults were unknown in those days, he placed his money in the pockets of an old worn out pair of trousers and hung them on the wall of their cabin. One day they were startled by the yells of approaching Indians, and in their great haste to get away the money was forgotten. The Indians searched in vain for the occupants of the cabin and went
The old Roads home. Kennedy's Peak in background. The house has a fort cellar. It is just west of the house that was burned when John Roads was killed in 1764. When David J. Strickler lived here he called it Hope Farm. Inset—Roads Memorial, unveiled August 31, 1924. Mr. Philip M. Kauffman, in his 78th year, made the memorial from native limestone, and deserves the gratitude of all the Roads' descendants. This piece of work is all the more remarkable inasmuch as Mr. Kauffman is not a stone cutter by trade, but a miller.
away, and when the family returned found their money undisturbed." * This story was related to me by Miss Olive Burner of Carthage, Ill., who obtained it from Mr. Reuben Ruffner who died in 1905, aged 87 years. I have been told that an old fort was begun on the J. W. Ruffner Farm across the river from this Burner home.

THE OLD ROADS HOME

(Hope Farm)

Proceeding down the left bank of the river, a mile or so above Bixler's Ferry, in the lower end of Roads Bend, we come to another very interesting old fortified home. Mr. Geo. Bauserman is living there now (1923) and has been for upwards of forty years. This old home is located near the spot where John Roads was killed by the Indians. The house was probably built by a son of John Roads. † David J. Strickler once lived there. It has a fortified cellar very much like the one in Egypt, except that it has only the one room, the vault, which extends along the entire west side. There is a spring in this cellar, and the floor is laid with flat limestone, worn smooth by feet that have long since ceased to tread the pathway of this life. There are also two other springs near the house. This is a well preserved house and has been occupied continually since it was built. It was known as "Hope Farm" when David J. Strickler lived there. I have been told that this house has puncheon floors now covered with boards. ‡

THE COL. DANIEL STRICKLER HOME

This is a stone structure east of Bixler's Ferry. It was occupied by Col. Daniel Strickler, later by his son, Harrison Strickler, and now by McKendra Strickler, son of Harrison. It has no fort cellar but was strongly built, for protection against the Indians, no doubt. I saw a very old deed in which he was referred to as "Stone House" Daniel.

* This occurred, very likely, before the fort was built.
† It was not likely that this fort at the Roads home was there in 1764 when the massacre occurred, in fact, these early pioneers lived in peace with the Indians until 1756 when the Indians were incited by the French to make raids upon the settlements. I have been told that the house which was burned at the time Roads was killed stood near the present house.
‡ John Gatewood lived here about 1830 when Kercheval wrote his History, afterwards David Jay Strickler lived here and later his son, David Gatewood Strickler.
THE OLD MAJOR KEYSER HOME

Proceeding down the river we come to the old home of Major Andrew Keyser. This is a very old log house but it has no fort cellar. It is nearly opposite the mouth of the Hawksbill.

THE OLD STOVER HOME AND FORT CELLAR

On the right bank of the river, about a mile down stream from the mouth of the Hawksbill, stands a stone structure once the home of Samuel Stover. It is located in the toe of the first bend below the Hawksbill, at the foot of a steep hill, just below a spring, and at the edge of a narrow green meadow that extends up and down the river front between the hill and the water. The meadow is only a few hundred yards wide. It is a serenely beautiful spot and most secluded. The view across the river is that of a dense forest and on beyond is Kennedys Peak. It is a very tall structure but it cannot be seen as you go down thru the fields from the main road, toward the river, by a private gate-way about a mile in length, until suddenly you peep over the brow of the steep hill when you can almost jump down the chimney. The walls of this home seem to be perfect altho built probably as early as 1760. I was not able to see into the vault-cellar but I could see the loop holes from the outside which are very much like those in the other old homes here described, and clearly indicate the thickness of the walls to be over two feet. There is a large chimney at either end built in the walls. High in the west gable there is an impression about one foot square and about three inches deep which was at one time, no doubt, occupied by a stone bearing the date of the building. This old home is now owned by G. Trenton Long, but J. William Riley and his family occupy the house. Kercheval tells of a Mrs. Stover, the mother of Daniel Stover, who told him of seeing plainly across the river, about two miles off, the fire that consumed the Roads home in 1764. This old stone house is probably three miles as the bee flies from the Roads home. But if this was the wife of Samuel Stover, the mother of Daniel, she may have seen the fire from Sandy Hook a mile nearer, for the family may have been living there then.

Mr. Adam Strickler has this to say about Mr. Stover: "The first flour mill in the County was near Sandy Hook (on the Hawksbill just a short distance above its mouth), built by an enterprising German named Samuel Stover. Later it was owned in the order named, Brittain, then by Enos McKoy. There was also a store near the creek ford at the same place, owned by James Headley
Stover House, built by Samuel Stover on the river a mile below Sandy Hook. It has a vaulted cellar, built about 1760.

and a post office kept at the mill by McKoy. Near the mouth of the Hawksbill at Sandy Hook there is a big bluff fancifully thought to have some resemblance to the bill of a hawk, hence the name of the creek, “Hawksbill”. This information is from my long departed and greatly beloved stepfather, Maj. Andrew Keyser.” Maj. Keyser was a revolutionary soldier and his father Chas. Keyser was with Braddock. They lived on the left bank of the river opposite the mouth of the Hawksbill on the northern-most limits of the Massanutten patent. The old log house is still standing now used by Raymond Strickler as an out house. It has the large fireplace as the other old homes. This Stover home is the only home with a fort cellar that is not located on the Massanutten patent; however, it is likely that Stover owned land above the mouth of the Hawksbill and if he did it was on the patent.

Adam Strickler has this to say about the old residents most of whom if not all were on the Massanutten patent. “The oldest settlers for about ten miles below Massanutten were in order named: The Kauffmans, Joseph Strickler, Joseph Burner, Samuel Burner, the Rhodes family, Marks Grove, Abraham Heiston, Michael Bixler, William Judd, John Aleshire, Mathias Rhinehart, Charles Keyser, Sr., Samuel Stover and Christian Bumgardner. They located there about 1700.” Adam has the date of location a little too early; however, this information is very interesting. It locates the old settlers very definitely.*

* It may even be proved that some of these settlers were here shortly after 1700 and the old brick in Egypt bearing date 1705 may indicate the date when they first settled here as squatters.
SANDY HOOK AND THE HAWKSBILL

The Hawksbill from the mouth of Pass Run to where it empties into the Shenandoah describes a letter S. This letter stands for Stover who started the survey of his patent at this point. It might also be compared to a figure 3 and therefore refers to the year of his patent, 1733. The Stover mill was located on the Hawksbill a short distance from its mouth and just above the bluff that resembles the bill of a hawk. It has been, and still is, known as Sandy Hook. This name, I am told, is derived from the sandy soil thru which this hook extends.

SPRING FARM

If we should go up the Hawksbill from its mouth several miles we would come to the mouth of Pass Run and proceeding further up the Hawksbill would come to the mouth of Dry Run and going up this run we would come to a big spring. It is an enormous spring and the flow is sufficient to turn a mill wheel. The farm on which this spring is located is known and has been known as "Spring Farm" for many years. It was first patented by Michael Kaufman, for the orphans of Martin Kaufman, deceased, evidently the Mennonite minister who died in 1749. The farm was in the shape of a rectangle, a little longer than wide—340 by 189 poles. Martin Kaufman's daughter married Henry Brumback and became the mother of all the Brumbacks in Page County as well as a large progeny in Ohio. This was the ancestral home of the Brumbacks. (1754 D. B.—H.P.443—Richmond 400 acres on Dry Run.)

THE WHITE HOUSE

There are many very old homes in Page, but the White House it seems to me deserves honorable mention. It stands on the right bank of the river about a hundred yards down stream from the north end of the White House bridge. It is a stone structure and plastered on the outside. Originally it was no doubt white, but now it is tawny with age. Once there was a Post Office at this point called Massanutten. I have been told of a miraculous escape from this house during the flood of 1870. As I recall the story, a man was washed out of this house, and he saved his life by catching hold of the limbs of the trees that stood below the house.
MASSANUTTEN

Many persons drowned in Page during this flood. Other high waters were recorded on November 27, 1877, on May 31, 1889, and on September 30, 1896. The Miley Notes state that this house was built for a fort. This old home has long been a landmark or more correctly a mile post. Distances are often given by stating that the particular place is so many miles up or down the river from the White House. Henry Strickler once lived here. In the early days, it was probably used as a meeting house.

The White House is 36 by 25 feet, two story, and of solid masonry. From the north to about two-thirds of the length of the house is an arched cellar just like the other vaulted or fortified cellars. I found only one port hole, about six inches wide and a foot high at the surface of the ground at the north end. This opening is above the roof of the vault and consequently extends inwardly and downwardly until it opens into the vault. Apparently the entire cellar is beneath the surface and this is the only opening admitting light. I did not go into the cellar as it was half full of water from the recent flood of May 12, 1924. The water did not get into the first floor but it flowed around on the north side of the house and ran into the port hole. I was there on May 19, 1924. The walls of the house are over two feet thick by actual measurement. The outside walls have been plastered three times or at least three coats show at places. The walls seem to be drawn in several inches at the second story and at the beginning of the gable.

The room on the first floor next to the river extends across the entire house; has built-in presses on either side of the fireplace; a staircase leading to the second floor; a window, east, and west, and a door, south, east and west, and wainscoting or paneling about three feet from the floor all around the room, painted yellow. There is a chimney in the middle of the house.* The room above is similar to it and has built-in presses. It has a window east and west.

The house has all the appearance of being a very old structure and was doubtless built about 1750. There is a trap door leading into the cellar from the outside.†

* The south room is a very large one and could have been used for a meeting house for the pioneers. The river has probably filled in around the house from time to time. After the water subsided I discovered another loophole in the east wall of the cellar. There is also evidence of loopholes, now closed, in the walls of the first story.

† There may have been originally an entrance into the cellar from the inside similar to the other fort cellars. The land whereon this house is located was the home of Martin Kauffman, the minister, who died in 1746. He or one of his sons evidently built the White House. Rev. Martin Kauffman who died in 1805 lived just above the White House on the same side of the river where J. A. Brubaker now lives.
Just across the river on the hill at the south end of the bridge is a very old home, known as the home of Abram Strickler. Abraham Strickler, Sr., and Abraham Strickler, Jr., lived here, the former being the father of Henry. This was on the Benjamin Strickler share of his father's possessions, and was a part of the original Egypt tract.

There are many very old homes in Page County in the vicinity of Massanutten and at other places but I know of no other homes with fort cellars. All of these forts are located on the Massanutten patent, except the Stover home which is just a short distance north of the patent. All of them have or did have immense fireplaces, probably eight feet or more in width, with a log about eighteen inches square and about ten feet long to support the rock over the opening. Higher up in the chimney was a pole called a "lubber pole" whereon were hung the kettles. Many of them have pine holes wherein was placed a pine torch to light the room. I have heard of pioneer homes built in various places in the Valley of Virginia with an idea of protection against the Indians but I have heard of none constructed with vaults as these old Massanutten homes were.

The Hite home five miles north of Strasburg had a fort nearby, I understand.

THE FLOOD ON THE NIGHT OF SEPTEMBER 28-29, 1870

Harvey C. Strickler, owner of Locust Grove in 1870, wrote an interesting letter to his sister, Mrs. Thomas J. Spitler of Indiana, describing the flood of that year. Here are a few excerpts from the letter:

"Dear Thomas and Nannie:

it continued to rise with the greatest rapidity; even after it spread over the bottoms, more so indeed, for, when it reached the walls of our house it went up about seven feet at a single bound or swell. It was at night, the 28th of September, (1870) and you can only imagine the excitement and consternation that prevailed here then. We had time only to grab up a few things and repair to the garret .... At this time the roaring of the raging water and the crash of trees and drift outside was terrible. It continued to rise until it reached seven feet on the lower floor which was about 3 o'clock in the morning although it rained unceasingly all night and until about 12 o'clock next day. About
1 o'clock a little boat was got ready and Mr. Paul Henkel and John Haynes came to our assistance. The water had subsided only about eight inches when the first boat load went out. At 5 o'clock the last trip was made sailing over the tops of the outer gate posts, consisting of my wife, myself, Virgie and little Sallie ......... “Affectionately your brother, Harvey.”

Mr. Strickler estimates his loss at $5,000. He lost 250 barrels of corn, 400 bushels of wheat, cattle, horses, hogs, chickens, vegetables, and his land was ruined for a fall crop. His young orchard was a wreck and the old trees were washed down. His late potato patch was five feet under the sand, the yard was four feet under sand, the garden and much of the farm was either washed off or filled up with sand from four to ten feet deep. There was a strong current west of the house that made it very dangerous for the occupants as the river was black with drift wood.

He says that Noah Kite and family were lost in the flood, except his eldest son who left the house near Selser’s ford and succeeded in getting on a pile of drift wood which lodged on Philip Long’s bottoms and was rescued; that Thomas Blakemore (who married Mary Kauffman, a cousin), and family of near Front Royal were all drowned. It must have been a dark and doleful night.

The above letter was given to me by Mrs. Virginia S. Milbourne, the one called Virgie above. The others mentioned as having been taken to safety were his mother, his sister, and two orphans of David Jay Strickler, Mrs. J. H. Brumback, Opequon, Va., and Mrs. D. J. Burner of Massanutten. Mrs. Milbourne tells me that the flood carried away the long porch which extended along the entire front of the house; that the locust trees were the only glory that survived the flood and that there were about ten of them, large in girth and extremely tall. Mrs. Milbourne can still enjoy the sweet scented blossoms of spring time.*

I understand that the bodies of Mr. and Mrs. Noah Kite were found on Gander’s Island, near Harvey Strickler’s home several months after the flood.

* On Sunday night May 11 and 12, 1924, the river was higher than it had been since 1896 but not so high as it was then. It filled the cellar at the White House but did not get into the first floor in 1924.
The Bloody Ford

Where one of the Roads Family was killed by the Indians. Kennedy's Peak in the background, which is opposite the mouth of the Hawksbill.
THE ROADS MASSACRE BY THE INDIANS
AUGUST 1764

(From the Miley Notes)

“In August, 1764, the home (Roads) on South River was attacked by a marauding party of eight Indians accompanied by a white man, intent on securing money.

“The father was killed standing in the door, the mother and a son met the same fate in the yard. A second son attempted to escape by going into the river, but was overtaken and killed.

“Another son at work in the cornfield, climbed a pear tree to ascertain the cause of the trouble at home, was immediately observed and shot.

“A girl about twelve years old ran to the barn with her baby sister in her arms. She was followed by an Indian intent on murder but a bolted door hindered his purpose. With shouts and imprecations he went to the house for fire which gave her time to escape from the barn to a hemp-patch near by.

“After scalping their victims and burning all the buildings, they retraced their way across the Massanutten Mountains, taking with them three of the children. Having reached the upper Fort Valley, the youngest boy, aged about seven, was tired from the journey and was killed, as was also the girl of ten, whose bitter weeping over the fate of her family angered the Indians.

“This information was given by Michael, the boy of fifteen who was carried away and remained a captive for over three years.

“On his return he made his home with his brother Joseph who lived eight miles south of Luray.

“When Michael Roads was carried off by the party of Indians who had murdered his parents, brothers and sisters, this horror was added to his trials. The scalps of these loved ones were sold to the French at $15.00. This alone was the money booty. A niche in the cellar wall contained the valued papers and the money possessed by his father. These were found uninjured after the fire.” *

The above story was taken from the “Miley Notes” now in the possession of Miss Emily Boyers of Stephens City, Virginia, who was kind enough to send me a copy of the above sketch. She is a granddaughter of Martin F. Miley, author of the notes. Mr.

* See p. 84 for Kercheval’s account.
Miley made many notes during his life time and this sketch is only a part of those notes.

It would seem that the French were responsible for this heinous crime. Probably they were interested as much in obtaining scalps as money, since the French stood ready to purchase these trophies. It throws light upon the policy of the French along the Ohio. Here was a Pennsylvanian Pilgrim who had followed the policy of William Penn, of goodwill toward the Indians, and yet he was brutally murdered by the Indians largely thru this nefarious and wicked policy of the French, thru the machinations of white men. I feel that the blood of these unfortunate folk is
upon the hands of white men more than it is upon the hands of Indians.

THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WARS

We are accustomed to think of the French and Indian (1754-1763) or the Seven Years War in Europe (1756-1763) of which it was a part, as a little war. It was not. It was a World War. It was a contest between England and Prussia on one side and France, Russia, Austria, Spain and other nations on the other. The great outstanding figure in that war was Frederick, the Great, of Germany.* When we think of Braddock and Washington at Fort Duquesne we think of the Acadians who were removed to Louisiana, Longfellow's Evangeline, William Pitt, Frederick the Great, Wolf, Montcalm, the Heights of Abraham, Quebec. It was a war that had far reaching consequences. At its conclusion vast territories were transferred. France lost all her American colonies. Spain obtained all the territory west of the Mississippi, while vast portions of territory in other parts of the world were transferred.

THE FIRST MASSACRE IN MASSANUTTEN 1758

How a Massacre Could Have Been Prevented Had a Woman's Voice Been Heeded

A woman's scent of danger is keener than that of the male. In 1755 Braddock marched on Fort Duquesne and was defeated, Washington saving a remnant of his forces. From this time until 1766 or 1767 the frontier settlements were exposed to the raids of Indians led by French officers. During a period of ten years, therefore, the frontier settlements lived in constant dread of these cruel and heartless foes. When a civilized man arms a savage with his improved implements for the purpose of attacking his white brother, he stoops to the lowest possible depths of humanity. The savage is as far above him as the stars are above the earth. I do not condemn the Indians. I condemn the French.

* Many places in the United States were evidently named for him. He sent his photograph to Washington with this inscription: "From the oldest General in Europe to the greatest General in the world."
The peaceful settlement of Massanutten was first disturbed by the Indians in 1758, two years after the Seven Years War started. This was a World War. This part of the History of Virginia has never been properly emphasized. Every Virginian, every American, should know as much about this war as the Revolution. The name Braddock, suggests Washington and his charmed life, Fort Duquesne, Seven Years War, and Ten Years of Thrilling Adventures and Hair-breadth Escapes—Ten Years of torture—Ten Years of massacre, murder, rapine, plunder, arson, scalping.

Then there was peace for ten years until 1774. Then they had Dunmore’s War and the battle of Point Pleasant, the bloodiest of the Indian battles. Colonel Andrew Lewis commanded the Virginia troops and Cornstalk, king of the Shawnees, led the Indians. Colonel Charles Lewis, brother of the commander, was mortally wounded.

Kercheval, writing about 1830, has the following to say about Indian depredations in the neighborhood of Massanutten:

“The men never went out of the forts without their guns. The enemy were frequently lurking about them, and at every opportunity would kill some of the people. At the residence of Major Robert D. Glass, on Opequon, five miles southwest of Winchester, part of his dwelling-house was erected in the time of the Indian war; the portholes were plainly to be seen before the body was covered with weather-boarding. The people were closely ‘forted’ for about three years. After the termination of hostilities between England and France, the incursions of the Indians were less frequent, and never in large parties; but they were continued at intervals until the year 1766 or 1767.

The Stone Massacre

“About the year 1758, a man by the name of John Stone, near what is called the White House, in the Hawksbill settlement, was killed by Indians. Stone’s wife, with her infant child and a son about seven or eight years old, and George Grandstaff, a youth of sixteen years old, were taken off as prisoners. On the South Branch Mountain, the Indians murdered Mrs. Stone and her infant, and took the boy and Grandstaff to their towns. Grandstaff was about three years a prisoner, and then got home. The little boy, Stone, grew up with the Indians came home, and after obtaining possession of his father’s property, sold it, got the money, returned to the Indians, and was never heard of by his friends afterwards.
"The same Indians killed Jacob Holtzman's wife and her children, Holtzman escaping. They plundered old Brewbecker's house, piled up the chairs and spinning wheel, and set them on fire. A young woman who lived with Brewbecker had concealed herself in the garret; and after the Indians left the house, extinguished the fire, and saved the house from burning. Brewbecker's wife got information that the Indians were coming, and ran off with her children to where several men were at work, who conveyed her across the river to a neighboring house. Mr. John Brewbecker now resides on the farm where this occurrence took place.*

**BRUBAKER'S FAMILY SAVED BY HIS GOOD WIFE**

"The following singular tradition, as connected with this occurrence, has been related to the author:

"About dusk on the evening previous, Mrs. Brewbecker told her husband and family that the Indians would attack them next morning, saying that they could see a party of them on the side of the Massanutten Mountain, in the act of cooking their supper. She also declared that she saw their fire, and could count the number of Indians. She pointed to the spot; but no other part of the family saw it; and it was therefore thought that she must be mistaken. Persisting in her declarations, she begged her husband to remove her and her children to a place of safety; but she was laughed at, told that it was mere superstition, and that she was in no danger. It was, however, afterwards ascertained that the savages had encamped that night at the place on the mountain pointed out by Mrs. Brewbecker. It was about two miles off.†

"These outrages of the Indians drove many of the white settlers below the Blue Ridge."

So we see Mrs. Brewbecker was not over-cautious when she warned her husband. Had her advice been heeded, the massacre at Massanutten would, no doubt, have been prevented. It does not

* "Mr. Brewbecker resides on the west side of the South Fork of the Shenandoah River, on Massanutten Creek, in the new county of Page, and has erected a large and elegant brick house on the spot where the Indians plundered his father's dwelling."

† "This tradition was given the author by Mr. Andrew Keyser, Jr., who married a granddaughter of the woman who saw the Indians."

The Brubaker home was near Locust Grove, Isaac Strickler's stone house in Massanutten.
take an imaginative mind to picture Mrs. Brewbecker sitting in her yard, with her child in arms, or at her window, looking towards the mountains. She must have kept a watchful eye in the direction of the spot where she saw the Indians, and the first alarm at the Stone home found her prepared to flee to safety. Mr. Lion, when Mrs. Lion sniffs the air and anticipates approaching danger, wakes up and shakes his shaggy mane, for ‘coming events have cast their shadows before them.’ How often has a man been ruined by not heeding the advice of his wife.

The infant daughter, carried into the field by Mrs. Brewbecker, was Susan, in later years the wife of Isaac Strickler, who built the stone mansion in Massanutten known as “Loeust Grove.” The Brewbecker home was up the Massanutten Creek a few hundred yards from Loeust Grove and on the opposite side of the stream, where an old brick residence now (1924) stands. This, evidently, was the handsome new home that Kercheval says Brewbecker had just built in 1830. Proceeding up the creek towards the mountain a few hundred yards more, we come to the spot where the Stone home was located, now in the yard of the handsome brick residence of Mrs. Sallie Brubaker. Mr. William Brubaker, who lives here with his mother, showed me the old stone house over the spring in the yard which is supposed to be the spot where the Stone home stood and the spot where Stone was killed. John Stone was likely the son of Ludwig Stone (Stein) who purchased several of the Massanutten lots. It will be noted that the Indians coming down from off the mountain side would approach the Stone home first.

John Brewbecker, who purchased one of the Massanutten lots, never came to Virginia. He sold this lot to his son, Abraham, who located on it. His son Abraham married Barbara, daughter of Jacob Miller, Senior, the founder of Woodstock, (Muellerstadt), and came into possession of some of the Miller lands at Woodstock, and I am told gave land for the erection of a Court House at Woodstock, this being the site of the present Court House. Abraham Brewbecker, the pioneer, came to the Valley from Pennsylvania, in 1733, we are told, and married Barbara Long, daughter of Paul Long, born 1711, died 1759, the son of Philip Long, born 1678, died 1753, the owner of Fort Long, now owned by Mrs. C. D. Price. Barbara Long Brewbecker is the one who gave the good advice and was laughed at. I dare say “old man Brewbecker” listened to his wife after this circumstance.

I am inclined to the opinion that this raid caused defensive preparations in Massanutten which resulted in the building of the combination homes and forts.
On another page, Kercheval speaks of the Roads massacre as occurring in 1766, but tradition in the Roads family says that it occurred in 1764. He describes it as follows:

"In the latter part of August, the same year, a party of eight Indians and a worthless villain of a white man crossed Powell's Fort Mountain, to the South Fork of the Shenandoah, at the late residence of John Gatewood, Esq., where the Rev. John Roads, a Menonist preacher of the Gospel, then lived. Mr. Roads, his wife, and three of his sons were murdered. Mr. Roads was standing in his door, when he was shot and fell dead. Mrs. Roads and one of her sons were killed in the yard. One of the young men was at the distance of about one hundred and fifty yards from the house, in a corn field. Hearing the report of the guns at the house, he ascended a pear tree to see what it meant, where he was discovered by an Indian and instantly killed. The third poor young lad attempted to save himself by flight, and to cross the river, but was pursued and killed in the river. The place is called the Bloody Ford to this day. The enemy demanded of the youth who was killed in the yard, where his father kept his money; and was told that if he did not immediately point out the place, they would kill him; but if he would show them the money, his life would be spared. On his declaring he could not tell them, he was instantly shot and fell dead. Mr. Road's eldest daughter, Elizabeth, caught up her little sister, a child about sixteen or eighteen months old, ran into the barn, and secured the door. An Indian discovered and pursued her, and attempted to force the door; but not succeeding, he with many oaths and threats ordered her to open it. On her refusing, the fellow ran back to the house to get fire, and while he was gone, Elizabeth crept out of a hole on the opposite side of the barn, with her little sister in her arms, ran through a field of tall hemp, crossed the river, and got safe to a neighboring house, and thus saved herself and sister.

"After plundering the house of such articles as they chose to take, the Indians set fire to all the buildings, and left the dead body of Mr. Roads to be consumed in the flames.* They then moved off, taking with them two of the sons and two of the daughters prisoners. The youngest prisoner was a weak, sickly little

---

*Mrs. Stover, the mother of Daniel Stover, Esq., now of Page county, stated to the author that she was then about fifteen years old, and distinctly saw the houses in flames from her father's residence, about two miles off, on the opposite side of the river; and the next day the neighboring people collecting to bury the dead, found Mr. Roads' body about half consumed. This note is Kercheval's.
boy, eight or nine years of age; he of course was not able to stand the fatigue of traveling, and crossing the head of Powell’s Fort, they killed him. His two sisters then refusing to go any farther with them, were barbarously murdered, and their bodies left a prey to wolves and other wild beasts. The other boy was taken off and remained about three years in captivity before he returned home. It was generally believed at the time, that the white scoundrel who was with the Indians, induced them to commit this horrid murder, in order to rob Mr. Roads of his money; but he missed his object. Mr. Roads kept his money and title papers in a niche in the cellar wall, the dampness and coolness preserved them from injury. They were all found safe.” (Kercheval, pp. 101-102).*

According to Kercheval, the Indians attacked the house of Mr. Bingaman, near the site of New Market, about the same time, killing Mr. Bingaman’s wife and children, taking Lewis Bingaman, a nephew, prisoner. He grew up with the Indians and became a man of distinction among them.

The Roads home was about two miles north of where Jacob Strickler lived at that time, and near the present (1922) home of Geo. R. Bauserman. Jacob Strickler lived in Egypt.

Kercheval writes of many other outrages committed by the Indians in the Valley of Virginia but no others in the immediate neighborhood of Massanutten.

Kercheval states that stone houses were erected in the Valley as early as 1751. It seems that Joist Hite and his sons-in-law had erected stone houses in the lower Valley about that time.

The edition of Kercheval above quoted from was revised and extended by W. N. Grabill, at Woodstock, Va., in 1902.

Mr. William Lee Strickler tells me that he always understood that the villainous white man spoken of above was Simon Girty and that the party came down the mountain by way of Burners’ path or pass, just north of Lick Run or just back of lower Egypt.† Recently a well worked road has been located here by the Luray tannery for the purpose of hauling out bark. When the Indians were on the top of the mountain they were as near to the Jacob Strickler home in Egypt as they were to the John Roads home. Mr. Strickler further tells me that he has often worked around the old pear tree and rested under its shade and that its fruit was bitter, that it was two feet or more in diameter and stood about

* See p. 81, Mr. Miley’s account.
† Simon Girty was a notorious robber in those days.
one hundred yards north of the Roads home. This is an historical spot, especially interesting to the many descendants of the survivors of that gruesome August day.

I was present on the day of the unveiling of the Roads memorial August 31, 1924, and the place that was marked as the location of the pear tree on that day was about where Mr. Lee Strickler says it was located. He also tells me that he at one time dug down and found the charred remains of the grain that was in the loft of the house on the day it was burned by the Indians. The place marked as the site of the house that was burned was a few feet east of the memorial and just south of the easternmost of the two springs near the present house.

THE BLOODY FORD

The Bloody Ford, wherein one of the sons of Roads was killed, is several hundred yards down the river from the present house. If a line were drawn from the memorial across the site of the pear tree it would approach the river near the site of the Bloody Ford.

THE ROADS GRAVEYARD

The Roads family, massacred by the Indians, are buried on the bank of the river not far from the location of the pear tree. The stones are there today to mark the long graves and the little graves.

THE SURVIVORS OF THE ROADS MASSACRE

Besides the children of John Roads who were at home and escaped the massacre there were others who were married and living away from home, or were not at home temporarily at least. John Roads married Eve Albright, both killed by the Indians in 1764.*

Seven children survived the massacre as follows:
1. Joseph, the eldest, married Mary Strickler, daughter of Abraham Strickler, the pioneer, according to the "Miley Notes."
2. Michael, the captive, married Ann Strickler, daughter of Benjamin, who was a brother of Mary Strickler above.

*On the early records I find the name spelled Hans Root or Hans Roth. It was just as natural for this name to become Road as it was for Rothgeb to become Roadcap which frequently happened. The name Roth means red.
3. Daniel, died young, unmarried.
4. Susanna, married Mark Grove.
5. Anna, married Christian Grove, brother of Mark.
6. Elizabeth, married Jacob Gochenour.
7. Esther, the baby, married Dr. Jacob Kaufman.

Those children massacred:
8. A son killed at the house.
9. A son killed in the pear tree.
10. A son killed in the Bloody Ford.
11. A son killed on the mountain side.
12. A little daughter killed on the mountain side.
13. A little daughter killed on the mountain side.*

Elizabeth is the one who carried her baby sister, then only eighteen months old, into the tall hemp and crossed the river to safety. Anna became the mother of Elizabeth Grove, who married David Strickler of Horseshoe Bend on Smith Creek who was my great grandfather. Elizabeth and Barbara Grove, sisters, married brothers, David and Joseph Strickler, of Horseshoe Bend. Michael Roads, the captive, married Nancy Strickler March 26, 1780, according to the Church of England, first being published according to law (that is by Banns), by Rev. A. Moffett. (Shenandoah Co. M. R.). I am indebted to Mr. P. S. Rhodes and the "Miley Notes" for much of the above information.

LORD FAIRFAX AND THE NORTHERN NECK

The Northern Neck comprised all the lands between the rivers Potomac and Rappahannock, the western boundary, until established, being an imaginary line connecting the head springs of the two streams.

In Hening’s Statutes, August, 1736, 10th George II, Vol. 4, p. 514, is an interesting act entitled:

“An Act for confirming and better securing the Titles to lands in the Northern Neck, held under the Right Honorable Thomas Lord Fairfax, Baron of Cameron, in that part of Great Britain, called Scotland.”

This Act is lengthy and gives all the names of the predecessors in title of Lord Fairfax, the original patents, and other matters, concluding with the provision that all previous grants to purchasers must be respected.

* The “Miley Notes” mention only one daughter as being killed on the mountain.
From this Act we learn that Charles II by letters patent at Saint Germains on Ley on the 18th day of September in the first year of his reign (1649) and by letters patent at Westminster on the 8th day of May in the 21st year of his reign (1670) granted lands between the heads of the rivers Rappahannock and Quiriough or Potomack to Ralph, lord Hopton, and six other distinguished gentlemen, including John, lord Culpeper, father of Thomas, lord Culpeper.

Charles I was beheaded in 1649 after the battles of Marston Moor and Naseby field, two outstanding events in history. Cromwell died in 1658, and Charles II actually reigned from 1660, although he immediately assumed the title of King of England on the death of his father, but found safety under the protection of Louis XIV of France to which country he fled.* This explains the fact that the patent in the first year of his reign was issued at Saint Germains on Ley, a town six miles north of Versailles, both of which towns are the seats of famous Royal Palaces and figured in the recent peace negotiations. King James II, brother of Charles II, died in exile at Saint Germains.

This grant was made by Charles to these gentlemen, no doubt, for their aid in assisting him to the throne. In one patent he recites among other considerations that for services rendered his "roil" father the grant is made. It was a very large grant and comprised practically all of the Shenandoah Valley and other vast territory amounting to about one-sixth of the present State of Virginia. † It was not only a vast grant but a grant that caused much litigation and trouble. Troubles in England were reflected in America. Many of the unfortunate king's friends came to America following his execution.

It seems that after the original patent was issued some of the patentees had died and others had sold their interests, whereupon the old patent was surrendered and a new one issued to the then owners at the same time protecting grants issued by the Governor and Council of Virginia, prior to the 29th day of September in the 13th year of his reign (1673). Thomas, Lord Culpeper, eldest son and heir of John, late Lord Culpeper, dec'd., having purchased all the interests in the Northern Neck, James II confirmed title to him on the 27th day of September in the 4th year of his reign (1689).

*He also spent some time in Holland.
† Nearly six million acres.
Lord Culpeper died, and title passed by descent to Lady Catherine Fairfax, nee Culpeper, who bequeathed it to her son Thomas, Sixth Lord Fairfax, b. about 1690, never married, came to Virginia in 1746, established himself at Greenway Court about 12 miles southwest of Winchester prior to 1749 where he lived the remainder of his life. He established an office and issued patents to purchasers. These deeds have been removed to Richmond. Here he died in 1782, having remained true to his King, in his 92d year. History says that on hearing of the surrender of Lord Cornwallis, on October 19, 1781, he requested his servants to assist him to bed, at the same time remarking: “It is time for me to die.”

By his will, recorded in Frederick County, he devised his possessions to his nephew, Rev. Denny Martin, upon condition that he should procure an Act of Parliament to pass to take upon him the name Fairfax and coat of arms. *

During the Revolution, the General Assembly of Virginia passed an Act forfeiting the Fairfax interests in the Northern Neck as the property of an alien enemy. † Kercheval says Denny Martin Fairfax left no children and conveyed his interest to Messrs. Marshall, Colston, and Lee.

Section 2299 of the Code of Virginia (1904) provides that the condition of the will of Lord Fairfax, in regard to the act of Parliament, shall be taken as true without proof. See also Code of Virginia, 1819, p. 352. ‡

The agent in Virginia for the Fairfax lands from 1692 to 1732 was Robert Carter (“King Carter”), and on his death in 1732 Benjamin Borden filled the office, but his avarice caused trouble, and Fairfax obtained the services of his nephew, Col. William Fairfax, son of his brother Henry. William came to Virginia about 1734 and established himself at Belvior. He had a son George William Fairfax who became a friend to young George Washington. Lord Fairfax made a visit to Virginia in 1739. In 1746 he came to stay, and soon thereafter located at Greenway Court. George Washington, with his friend, George William Fairfax, made his first trip to the Shenandoah Valley to visit Lord Fairfax at Greenway Court and to do some surveying for him in

* W. B. 15, p. 583, Frederick Co.
† It would seem that this Act did not accomplish its purpose or was revoked as the will of Fairfax was afterwards recognized.
‡ In the Clerk’s Office of Warren County is an exemplification on sheep-skin of a document conferring the title Lord Fairfax on Denny Martin. It is dated 1821. The 12th Lord Fairfax, Albert Kirby Fairfax, is now visiting America. The 3d Lord Fairfax stood boldly with Cromwell, but assisted Charles II to the throne.
1748. Fairfax became a warm friend to Washington. The young surveyor kept a diary on this trip which is very interesting. He received a doubloon per day. Sometimes he received several pistoles.*

It is generally believed that George Washington ran the Fairfax line, but it seems that that line was established in 1746. Washington did surveying for Fairfax two years later at the age of sixteen, as an assistant to the surveyor of Fairfax. In 1749 he received a license to survey. He may have marked out the line more clearly afterwards.

In 1745 the King designated the western boundary line to the Fairfax dominions by an imaginary line from the head waters of the Potomac to Conway River, a branch of the Rapidan. The Conway River is the next stream north of Swift Run Gap and is now the dividing line between Greene and Madison Counties.

In 1746 a joint commission of six was appointed to definitely establish the line. The King appointed three, Col. Wm. Byrd of Westover, John Robinson, and John Grymes. Fairfax appointed three, Thomas Lewis, Robert Brooks, and Geo. Wm. Fairfax. One section started at the head waters of the Potomac and planted the Fairfax stone October 12, 1746, at that point of Maryland that juts into Tucker County, W. Va. The other section started on the Conway River. They met and finished their work December 14, 1746. A company of militia under Joshua Fry (who afterwards died at Wills Creek) accompanied them.†

In the agreement establishing the Fairfax line it was provided that none of the patents issued by the crown should be disturbed.

As early as 1729 the indefinite boundary line of the Northern Neck was causing trouble. In that year the Lieutenant-Governor of Virginia took up the subject of establishing the line. In 1736 a joint commission was appointed to determine the line, and they ended their labors in 1738. It was upon the finding of this commission that the surveyors established the line in 1746, if I interpret Kercheval correctly.‡ Kercheval discourses at length on the subject and states that in the suit between Maryland and Virginia in 1832 certain papers connected with the survey in 1746 were filed. Some of the exhibits mentioned were: A map of the Northern Neck drawn in 1736 and original journals of the survey-

* A pistole is a Spanish gold coin of varying value, about $3.00. A doubloon is a Spanish gold coin double the value of the pistole.
† This account is according to Kercheval. The Journal of Thomas Lewis kept at the time differs from it somewhat, and is correct no doubt.
‡ The surveyors of 1746 mention the marks at the head waters made in 1736.
ors in 1746, etc. If these papers were consulted, they would no doubt throw light upon the subject. *

In spite of the establishment of the line litigation went on. A suit between Jost Hite and Fairfax continued for fifty years and was decided in Hite’s favor in 1786, four years after the death of Fairfax and twenty-six years after Hite’s death. †

JOURNAL OF THOMAS LEWIS

After writing the foregoing I had the opportunity to read the journal kept by Thomas Lewis who was one of the surveyors on the line in 1746. ‡ It is a small note book about six inches by three inches consisting of about 85 pages written in ink in a legible hand. It gives an account of each day’s work from September 10, to November 13, 1746. The actual survey began on Thursday, September 25 and ended on November 13. **

The commissioners were:

For the King:
Col. Fry (Joshua Fry who died at Wills Creek while with Washington evidently.)
Col. Lun. Lomax.
Col. Peter Hedgeman.

For Fairfax:
Hon. Wm. Fairfax (of Belvoir.)
Col. Wm. Beverley.
George Fairfax, Esq. (Son of William probably.)

The surveyors were:

For the King:
Robert Brooks.
Col. Peter Jefferson (father of Thomas Jefferson.)

* Maryland filed a bill against Virginia in 1834 but it was dismissed. The question was decided in 1910 between Maryland and West Virginia.
† Wayland’s Ger. El. p. 52. Washington, the Man and Mason; Schroeder & Lossing,—Life of Washington; Kercheval; Henings’ Statutes, 1736, pp. 514; 1738, pp. 79-80; 1744, p. 275; 1753, p. 876.
‡ I saw the Journal and read a typewritten copy of the original made by Dr. J. W. Wayland, who had the Journal temporarily in his possession. The Journal was used as an exhibit in the suit between Maryland and West Virginia concluded in 1910.
** He returned home on November 19, where he remained until November 30, when he again met the commissioners to complete their maps, etc. In all he spent 127 days on the work.
**MASSANUTTEN**

For Fairfax:
Capt. Winslow (T. Winslow likely.)
Thomas Lewis (who kept the journal.)

Thomas Lewis probably lived at Staunton at this time but he later lived in Rockingham near Fort Republic. His descendants lived there later. A great many of the early surveys in Rockingham County (then Augusta) were made by Thomas Lewis.

Forty persons accompanied the commissioners. They had at least fourteen pack horses besides other horses.

They went to Conway river and found trees that were marked by the surveyors in 1736. This was on the middle branch there being three small branches of the Conway high up on the Blue Ridge. The trees were marked thus: TW IA IR MMH MO. TW was probably for Capt. Winslow as he is the only one in the company mentioned as being with the commission in 1736. On Thursday the 25th of September they took a course N. 41 & 23 W. 110 poles to the top of the Blue Ridge. Here they could see Peaked Mountain and took a bearing on it which was S. 75 W. On the 26th they took a bearing on Massanutten Gap which was N. 20 W. On the 27th they arrived at the River and made camp at "Loungs" down the river.* They continued in camp on Sunday the 28th. On the 29th they sent their horses thru Masenuten Gap and the surveyors continued the line across Peaked Mountain. The sun was hot and the mountains were high and steep and they became very thirsty but fortunately they came upon a branch between the 2d and 3d mountain which they called the "Fountain of Life"; crossed the third mountain and camped at Peter Shouls (Scholl) on Smith Creek. On the 30th 216 poles from the foot of the mountain to Smith Creek, 213 to the Indian Road (Valley Pike), 381 to the North Branch of the Shenandoah.

This line was continued for about 75 miles when they found that they had missed the head spring, their line running several miles to the east of it. They found the trees marked at the head spring by the commissioners in 1736, corrected their bearings and on the 23d day of October at 9:30 a.m. started their return journey on a bearing S. 46 E. which line was accepted as the true line. They missed their starting point on Conway River about 100 yards. Before leaving the head spring on the 23d, they marked a stone FX and about 25 persons marked about 15 trees with their

---

*Philip Long at Fort Long. It will be seen that Lewis calls Massanutten Mountain, Peaked Mountain.
initials. * The initials for the King “G. R.” were surmounted with a crown as were those of Lord Fairfax but of a simpler design. They arrived at the head of the Conway on November 13th, where they marked a rock “FX” and trees with their names. The line was 76 miles and 138 poles in length. The commission of 1736 simply marked the headwaters of the two streams and did not run the line apparently.

Their labors being over they dined and drank the health of the King and Lord Fairfax, firing nine guns for each and set off for Buckner’s quarter where they got some cider and apples.

The journal speaks of many hardships but the “Laurel Swamps” on the River “Styx” near the northwest end of the line must have been the worst place they had to go thru. At this point they could only make a mile and a half per day.

Some of the principal places mentioned along the line were:

**SEPTEMBER 1746**

25—On Thursday, the survey began on the Conway River.

**OCTOBER, 1746**

23—Head Spring of the Potomac, return journey began, S. 46 E.
26—River Styx 10 mi. (On the map of 1755, Jefferson-Fry map.)
28—N. Fork of S. Branch—20 mi.
28—S. Branch 21 mi. down the river to Coburns (Wapacoma River).
28—W. Fork of Mill Creek, 3 mi. down to Coburns.
29—Rested, etc.
30—Measured distance between lines N. 46 E. 894 poles.
30—King’s birthday—drank his health and discharged nine guns.
31—Remained in camp.

**NOVEMBER 1746**

1—S. Branch Mill Creek 28 mi. plus.
2—Arbivita Mt. 32 mi. large spring at foot.
3—Camped on top of a high mountain 36 mi.
4—Branch of Shenandoah runs to right 37 mi.
5—Capecapon Road 43 mi.

*In 1733 and for years afterwards the upper part of the Potomac was known as the Cohongoruton. It means wild geese. Wapacoma means wild plum. Wappatomaka means Little Potomac. Potomac means “They come and go.” All are Indian names.*
6—Devils Backbone or North Mountain 45 mi. Head Holmes Cr. 51 mi.

7—Distance between lines on 52 mi. point N. 44 E. 450 poles to a point northwest of Dobin's house.

8—North Branch of the Shandoa 57 mi. plus marked tree FX with crown.* Indian Road 478 poles from river. Indian Road to Smith Creek 356 poles—60 mi. plus. Camped at Lockharts where they had left some rum and wine.

9—Sunday remained in camp.

10—Foot of mountain 61—near first top 62 mi.—800 p. top of next. 64 mi. southeast side of mountain. Pine FX high bank of Shanando 65 went down the river about 3 mi. to Loungs and camped.

11—68 mi. foot of Mt. Here at 10 mi. point on old line N. 48 & 1-2 W. 230 poles to new line. Camped at Loungs. Lines nearly 2-3 mi. apart.

12—Drafts of the Hawks Bill 72 mi. 73 mi. N. Branch of Naked Creek.

13—About 10 o'clock a. m. head of the Conoway 76 plus 138 poles. About 100 yards below the place of beginning.

I imagine that there was some excitement in "Masenuten" when that army went thru especially since it placed their lands north of that line, and on the domains of Lord Fairfax, they having derived their title from the Colony of Virginia.

JEFFERSON AND FRY MAP

On the map made by Jefferson and Fry in 1755, bound with the book—"Gist's Journal"—, the place, "The Plains" is marked with a dot just south of the Fairfax line on the right bank of the Shenandoah River. This map was no doubt from Lewis's survey of the Fairfax line, so far as applicable, as it uses all the names that Lewis used. The river Styx and Laurel thickets are placed on the map where Lewis states in his journal that he found them. From this journal it would seem that Lewis did most of the work, the actual field work. Sometimes he was alone on the line with the assistants. He was probably off the line one day during the entire survey, while the others were off the line more or less all

*I understand the line crossed the N. Branch of the Shenandoah near Moffets old home, near Plains.
the time. I understand that there is in existence a map of the Shenandoah Valley made in 1707, but I have not seen it.*

MARYLAND V. WEST VIRGINIA

In the suit, State of Maryland v. State of West Virginia decided in 1910 by the Supreme Court of the United States, the Fairfax stone and its location is discussed at length. Maryland sought to move the western boundary line of Maryland about one and one-fourth miles further west, (distance north and south 37 miles), claiming that the head spring of the Potomac was west of the Fairfax stone. It was decided that the Fairfax stone was on the true boundary line. It was also contended in that suit that West Virginia owned to the north bank of the Potomac but the Court said that Maryland owned to the high water mark on the south bank of the Potomac, by reason of the grant by Charles I to Cecilius Calvert, Baron of Baltimore, in 1632.

The suit mentions the survey of 1736 and the one in 1746 and recites the fact that the journal of Thomas Lewis was in evidence. It also recites that Maryland filed a bill against Virginia in 1833 but that it was dismissed without any action being taken. It also suggests that Virginia surveyed the line at this time and located the Fairfax Stone and recites that Lieut. Melcher located the Stone in 1859 but that by 1910 it had been removed by vandals. It is now well marked by permanent monuments minutely described in the report of the commission filed in the suit. †

In 1748 an Act was passed, reciting the fact that the dispute touching the boundaries of the Northern Neck having been settled and the line marked, which provided that all grants of the crown lands in the Northern Neck be confirmed, but that the rents and services shall be to the Lord Fairfax and his heirs. ‡

THE FAIRFAX STONE

This stone is described by Lieut. Melcher in 1859 when he made his survey of the meridian line north from the Fairfax Stone, in the following words; "The initial point of the work—the Fairfax Stone—stands on the spot encircled by several small

* Lewis evidently named the river Styx, as well as other places.
† 217 U. S. Reports 1, and 225 U. S. Reports 1—bill was filed in 1891—decided in 1910.
‡ Act 1748—22d George II—Hening's Statutes at large.
MASSANUTTEN

streams flowing from springs about it. It consists of a rough piece of sandstone, indifferent and friable, planted to the depth of a few feet in the ground and rising a foot or more above the surface, shapeless in form, it would scarce attract the attention of the passer by. The finding of it was without difficulty, and its recognition and identification by the inscription FX, now almost obliterated by the corroding action of water and air. In order not to disturb this stone the first observatory was built immediately in the rear (south) of it." Here Melcher built his monument, 4 feet in height. The original Fairfax Stone was in existence until about the year 1883, when it was destroyed by vandals and subsequently carried away. (225 U. S. Reports p. 11). There is a map of the head springs of the Potomac published with the report.

In 1776, when Washington considered the American cause in great danger and while discussing the matter with an officer, said as he passed his hand across his neck: "My neck does not feel as though it was made for a halter. We must retire to Augusta County in Virginia. Numbers will be obliged to repair to us for safety, and we must try what we can do in carrying on a predatory war, and if overpowered we must cross the Alleghany mountains."

Washington, I am sure, was not referring to Augusta County as it is today constituted, or as it was constituted even when he uttered those immortal words. He was thinking of the greater Augusta that he knew when he was fighting the French and Indians, the Augusta that included all of Rockingham, and nearly all of Shenandoah and Page counties, the Augusta that included practically all of the Valley of Virginia, for Augusta was another name for that vast territory west of the Blue Ridge at one time. If he had in mind the bravery and the loyalty of men (and I am sure he had) surely he was thinking of Morgan and his deadly riflemen, the pride of the Revolutionary army, the first men from his native state to reach him at Cambridge, I am sure he was thinking of Muhlenburg and the 8th Virginia Regiment, the German Regiment, the ancestors of Stonewall Jackson's foot cavalry. The Tories in this section could be counted on your fingers. If this was a compliment that Washington bestowed upon a people it was to the entire people of the Valley, and not to any particular section of it. For obvious reasons he would have retired high up in the valley where the natural defense was greatest. Because a few Hessian Germans fought with the British army some have concluded that Germany was against us. This was not so. Frederick the Great
did not allow the Hessians to cross his territory on their way to America. He was the first Monarch to recognize our infant republic. It was Van Steuben, Frederick’s aide-de-camp, who drilled Washington’s army. Frederick paid this high compliment to Washington. He sent his portrait to Washington with these words “From the oldest general in Europe to the greatest general in the world.” *

In 1748 it was enacted by the Lieutenant Governor, Council and Burgesses of the General Assembly, that, the boundary line in dispute having been established, all crown grants within the Northern Neck be confirmed but that rents and services should be paid to Lord Fairfax and his heirs. (Va. Code 1819, p. 349.)

During the Revolution the Legislature forfeited the estate of Lord Fairfax as that of an alien enemy.

In 1785 an Act provided that all records of the proprietor’s office should be moved to the land register’s office at Richmond. It also provided that all unappropriated land within the Northern Neck should be granted as other unappropriated land, and the composition should be after the rate of thirteen shillings and four pence per 100 acres. It also discharged the landholders from all former composition and quitrents. (Va. Code 1819, p. 350).

In 1796 by a compromise Act, between Denny Fairfax and Virginia, it was provided that Fairfax should relinquish title to all unappropriated lands while Virginia confirmed title in Fairfax to those lands especially appropriated by him or Lord Fairfax. This Act recites that Virginia had asserted a claim to all the estate devised to Denny Fairfax, he being an alien, and that he should hold these specially described lands as if he had been a native citizen of the Commonwealth, and as if no forfeiture or escheat had taken place. (Va. Code 1819, p. 352).

GOVERNOR ALEXANDER SPOTSWOOD AND “THE KNIGHTS OF THE GOLDEN HORSE SHOE”

Spotswood came to Virginia as Lieutenant-Governor in 1710, established iron works at Germanna eighteen miles above the falls, (Fredericksburg now) of the Rappahannock, having imported German artisans from Nassau-Siegen with their families as workmen. Some of these Germans later moved ten miles further up

* Schroeder—Lossing pp. 1565 and 976.
I think Kercheval says that Washington contemplated retiring to Powell’s Fort, near Strasburg, as a last resort.
the river at the fork of the Rappahannock. The mine was ten miles below Germanna.

On a map published in 1796 and bound in Heads of Families (Virginia Volume), I find Germanna located in a great bend of the Rapid Ann just before it enters the Rappahannock proper. It is a bend easily distinguished from all other bends in the locality. It is less than twenty miles above Fredericksburg and about five miles east of a Court House which is not named but is probably Culpeper Court House. Culpeper County lies between the Rapidan and the Rappahannock, and the marked Court House is between these two rivers and about equally distant from them. On this map I find Germantown about ten or fifteen miles north of Germanna where the Hedgeman River enters the Rappahannock. Some of these Germans located west of Madison Court House in Madison County and established the far famed Hebron Lutheran Church. These Germans established the first blast furnace in America. * They were the Tubal Canes of America. The great bend, wherein was located Germanna, is now in the northeast of Orange County near a place called Indiantown.

In 1716 Spotswood made an expedition across the Blue Ridge, leaving Williamsburg August 18, arriving at Germanna on August 24, where the party spent four days, reached the top of the Blue Ridge September 5, descended into the Valley, crossed the river, called it the Euphrates, buried a bottle with a paper enclosed, on which the Governor wrote that he took possession of the place in the name and for King George the First of England (this was in the 2d year of the reign of King George the First).

The party returned to Germanna on September 10, and arrived at Williamsburg September 17, having traversed 438 miles, 219 in going out and the same on returning, the journey having consumed 28 days.

On November 5, 1716, Spotswood instituted the Tramontane Order, "The Knights of the Golden Horse Shoe", at which time he presented to each of his companions a golden horse-shoe, bearing the inscription; "Sic Juvat Transcendere Montes" meaning, I presume, that this will assist you to cross the mountains, on one side, and on the other the name of the order; "Knights of the Golden Horse Shoe."

Robert Beverly, one of the party, was the father of William Beverly who wrote a letter in 1732 in reference to obtaining a grant of land at a place called Massanutting Town.

Historians generally agree that Spotswood crossed the Blue Ridge at Swift Run Gap and crossed the river about three-fourths of a mile northwest of Elkton at Conrad's ford. Adam Miller who first located at Massanutten afterwards located near where Spotswood crossed the river and planted the bottle. By a straight line it is about 15 miles down the river from this place to the mouth of Massanutten Creek, the heart of the Massanutten country.

Had Spotswood taken a more direct route from Germanna he would have crossed the Blue Ridge at Thornton's Gap in which event he would have doubtless buried the bottle in Massanutten. Spotswood is not very definite in his statement as to where he crossed the mountain. Some one may some day find the bottle. It would be an interesting discovery. On the map of 1796 the South Branch has this legend for the river in the neighborhood of Massanutten; "Massanutten's or South Branch." *

In 1722, Spotswood was present at the Indian Treaty of the Six Nations, at Albany, at which time the Governor gave the Indians a Golden Horse Shoe with the request that if any of them ever came to Virginia they should bring that emblem with them.

At this conference the Indians agreed to move their road, leading from north to south thru Virginia, to the west side of the Blue Ridge. This road was known as "The Indian Road" when the first settlers came into the Valley and for many years thereafter. It no doubt passed thru Massanutten. It doubtless was the same road that was moved to the west of the Massanutten Mountain by the treaty of Lancaster (1744).

On September 5, 1921, "The Colonial Dames of America in Virginia" unveiled a monument to the memory of Governor Spotswood and his Knights on top of the Blue Ridge in Swift Run Gap. On this occasion Mr. Armistead C. Gordon of Staunton, Va. delivered an interesting address, from which I gathered some of the above information. It is not known where Spotswood is buried. Mr. Gordon thinks he is buried at Germanna.

THE FAR-FAMED HEBRON CHURCH

In 1740 some of Spotswood's Germans erected a church building which is the oldest Lutheran sanctuary standing in America

* Mr. Charles E. Kemper, I understand, has recently obtained information which leads him to the opinion that Spotswood crossed the Blue Ridge opposite Stanley, Page County, thru Milam's Gap. If this be true he looked down on Massanutten and doubtless crossed the river near the mouth of Massanutten Creek. Milam's Gap is near where the Fairfax Line crosses the mountain.
today. I refer to the far-famed Hebron Church, near Madison, Madison County, Virginia, near the eastern base of the Blue Ridge. The congregation, of course, dates beyond the date when this edifice was built. * John Casper Stover, Sr., was the first pastor. His successor, George Samuel Klug, preached for the Lutherans in the Massanutten settlement. His successor, Schwarbach, confirmed Paul Henkel, a boy of fourteen, 1768. Paul Henkel was a zealous minister and missionary and the founder of an interesting family. He resided at New Market, altho he spent much of his time on missionary tours. (Lutheran Landmarks and Pioneers in America, by Rev. W. J. Fink of New Market, 1917, p. 80).

It is not at all improbable that Spotswood saw Massanutten in 1716 for we are told that Adam Miller went from Lancaster County, Pennsylvania to Williamsburg, Virginia, where he learned from some of the members of the Spotswood expedition of the wonderful lands west of the mountain, that he followed the Spotswood trail and landed at Massanutten. The Blue Ridge is very high just east of Massanutten in the neighborhood of Stonyman. Could it have been possible that Spotswood crossed the mountain at this point and ascended one of the high peaks there for the purpose of obtaining an advantageous view? Had he done this he would have looked down on Massanutten, as from the sky. Robert Beverly was one of Spotswood's company. In 1732, his son William is interested in obtaining a patent of 15,000 acres on both sides of the Shenondore including an "old field, called and known by ye name of Massanutting Town." This is additional proof that Spotswood and his company saw Massanutten and that they were impressed with it. †

John Lederer, the German explorer of the Valley in 1669, relates that he climbed to the top of one of the highest peaks of the Alleghanies. Lederer and not Spotswood was the first white man to view the valley. The Spotswood expedition, however, has a direct bearing on the Massanutten settlement. ‡

---

* I understand that the Reformed Germans, of Germanna, went to Germantown in Fauquier, and the Lutherans went to Hebron in Madison Co. (Huddle’s Hist. of Hebron...)
‡ Wayland’s Ger. El., p. 18.
WASHINGTON'S VISIT TO ROCKINGHAM

After the war was over and the treaty of peace signed, General Washington, as a private citizen, made a journey of six or seven hundred miles, to the Ohio and back, returning thru Rockingham County, entering from the west by Brocks Gap and passing out thru Swift Run Gap. He visited at least three persons in Rockingham.

He spent the night of September 29 in Brocks Gap with Fitzwater (Fitzwater, probably about ten miles above Cootes Store).* On the 30th, passing by Mr. Bryan's home (Linville Creek) and the Widow Smith's, leaving Rockingham Court House two miles to the right, he came to Mr. Felix Gilbert's (Peale's Cross Roads) and arrived at the home of Thomas Lewis (near Port Republic) about sundown, after riding forty miles. On October 1st he dined at Bogota, the home of Gabriel Jones, the first lawyer in Rockingham and probably in the Valley. On the 2d he left his friend Lewis for Mt. Vernon.

He made this trip to see some of his lands on the Monongahela and more particularly to view the country for the purpose of gaining such knowledge as might be useful in advocating the building of a canal system connecting the eastern waters with the waters of the Ohio, in which he was very much interested. He travelled on horseback, with pack-horses to carry his tent and baggage.

It would be interesting to know what Washington and his friend Lewis talked about. No doubt they talked about Yorktown and Valley Forge and other incidental and recent happenings.

This information is from Washington's diary, kept on the occasion. The Father of his Country took a morning bath in Swift Run as he started across the mountain.

All Americans should be acquainted with the high points in the life of Washington, and the citizens of Augusta and Frederick should have a special interest in him since it was he who for seven years protected their ancestors from the French and Indians.

* In 1792 William and George Fitzwater lived in Brocks Gap according to tax records of Rockingham County.
MASSANUTTEN

A WASHINGTON CALENDAR

Born February 22, 1732, in Westmoreland County, Va.
In 1747, at the age of 16, went to Mt. Vernon, met Lord Fairfax, and did surveying for him.
Appointed Adjutant-General of militia at the age of 19.
In 1753, at the age of 21, was sent as Ambassador to the French near Lake Erie.
In 1754, second in command to Colonel Joshua Fry on an expedition against the French. Fry died at Wills Creek (Cumberland), and Washington assumed command.
On July 4, 1754, Washington surrendered to the French at Fort Necessity. Extend the western boundary line of Maryland a few miles into Pennsylvania and the point will be near this fort. This was his first defeat.
In 1755, with Braddock, he headed the Virginia forces against the French at Fort Duquesne and saved a remnant of Braddock's army. The Indians said that he had a charmed life.
Remained on the frontier the greater part of the time during the French and Indian war.
In 1758 with General Forbes against Fort Duquesne, Washington occupying that place in November.
In 1758 he was elected to the House of Burgesses from Frederick County. On his first appearance there he was highly complimented on his military services by the speaker. He endeavored to respond, but was too nervous to reply. "Sit down, Mr. Washington; your modesty equals your valor, and that surpasses the power of any language I possess!" the speaker is said to have remarked. He represented Frederick County seven consecutive years.
In 1759, married Martha Custis (a widow with two children), daughter of Colonel John Dandridge, widow of Colonel Daniel Parke Custis.
In 1774, Washington and Patrick Henry and five other Virginians went to Philadelphia to attend the Continental Congress.
On April 19, 1775, the "embattled farmers" stood at Lexington and "fired the shot that was heard around the world."
On June 15, 1775, he was elected commander-in-chief of the American forces.
On October 19, 1781, he received the sword of Lord Cornwallis at Yorktown.
On September 3, 1783, the treaty of peace was signed.
On April 30, 1789, elected President; served eight years; refused a third term. September 17, 1796, made his Farewell Address. On threatening hostilities with the French, was chosen commander-in-chief. Died December 14, 1799, at Mt. Vernon, the Mecca of America.

Martha Dandridge, daughter Col. John and Frances Jones Dandridge, who married at age of 17 Col. Daniel Parke Custis; died 1757; son, Hon. John Custis.
1. Frances, died in infancy.
2. Daniel, died in childhood.
4. Martha Parke Custis, died June 17, 1773.

Martha Dandridge Custis married Col. George Washington, January 6, 1759, and several months thereafter they moved to Mt. Vernon, taking with them the two Custis children.

Her son John died on November 5, 1781, having contracted fever at the battle of Yorktown. Left four children.
1. Eliza Custis.
2. Martha Custis.
3. Eleanor Parke (Nellie) Custis, married Lawrence Lewis.


Nellie Custis Lewis, after the death of her husband, moved to Audley, Clarke County, near Berryville, Va., and died there.

HEADS OF FAMILIES

First United States Census

Lists from Heads of Families covering Page County and part of Rockingham.

There is nothing in Heads of Families to indicate in what locality of the county families lived. This can be determined right accurately in various ways. I have selected from the lists of Shenandoah and Rockingham Counties those names which I think cover the territory lying between the Massanutten and the Blue Ridge. I may not have all the names in that territory, but certainly that part of the lists here given covers territory around
Luray, the Hawks Bill, and the South Branch to a point south of Peaked Mountain, probably to the Augusta County line.*

The lists in Shenandoah County for 1783 are placed opposite those for 1785, in order to show more clearly that the two lists cover, to a large extent, the same ground and include largely the same names, with a slight variation of spelling. The second number indicates the number of slaves.

Only about half of the Counties of Virginia are listed in Heads of Families, and about half of those listed appear twice; that is, in two census years. Shenandoah appears twice, Frederick and Rockingham once, and Augusta does not appear at all except in the list of totals.

The lists that follow compose the South Branch Division of "Jefferson’s Noble Tenth Legion." The lists for Rockingham are evidently not complete as they do not contain the name of at least one prominent East Rockingham citizen, Thomas Lewis, whom George Washington visited in 1784.

UNITED STATES CENSUS IN HEADS OF FAMILIES

EAST ROCKINGHAM—1784

I will here give a list as found in the "Heads of Families" made by Michael Rorok (O’Rorark) south of the Fairfax line in Rockingham County. It covers territory up the river probably as far as Port Republic. The list not being in alphabetical order, a few of the names preceding and following that of any person will indicate right accurately who his neighbors were in 1784.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Kite, George</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kite, John</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Youly, Jacob</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Runkle, Lewis</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Long, Henry</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kite, William</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Watson, Zachariah</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Louderback, Joseph</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lee, Zachariah</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Munger, David</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shulder, Matthias</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fulce, George</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oler, William</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oler, Henry</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Price, Francis</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oler, John</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Price, Henry</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiser, Mich'l</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiser, Felty</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Evert, Windle</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Loudeck, Matthais</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berry, Malchia</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Yearly lived near the Augusta County line when Rockingham was established.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Age</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Fulce, John, Sen.</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fulce, John, Jun.</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoard, William</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strickler, John</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Toleymayer, Mich.</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hill, Francis</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rutherford, Robt.</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rorok, Michael</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comber, Stofey</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carthrea, John</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hannah, Joseph</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yarley, Benj.</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hannah, Thomas</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rickle, Matthew</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bailes, Thomas</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maffort, Gasper</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fisher, Daniel</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coshew Bennoni</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cook, Henry</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hook, Robt. Sr.</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hook, Robt. Jr.</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hook, Wm. Sr.</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hook, Wm. Jr.</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hudlow, Andrew</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Morrison, John</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hook, James</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fisher, Abraham</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peslinger, Jacob</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Scott, Jacob</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chapman, John</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lemmon, John, Jr.</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Campbell, Elizabeth</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beard, James</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller, Leonard</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Painter, Leonard</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Painter, Geo.</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dike, Jacob</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dike, Henry</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bell, William</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Smith, Henry</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huston, Mary</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiplinger, Jacob</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maheffe, John</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whkle, Peter</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Keller, Lewis</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Miller, John</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lemmon, John</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiplinger, Philip</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carpenter, Barnet</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taner, Mich.</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Edde, John</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berger, Math. Well</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viah, Gidion</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Black, Henry</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ireland)</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fanner, Mich.</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Serphes, John</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shire, Jacob</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oldorpha, Anthony</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Davis, Thomas</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Whitmer, Jacob</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Troborough, William</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nicolas</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Foutwiler, Leonard</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crofford, William</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baker, John</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Snap, Jno.</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Friazor, John</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Youn, Samuel, Jr.</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cook, Jacob</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roadiamour, Barbary</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roadiamour, Jacob</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sherer, Mich.</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Doubt, Matthias</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shoulderman, John</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deadmour, Christian</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoop, John</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alford, John</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lingerfield, John</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Case, Thomas</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Armstrong, Henry</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boswell, George</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The slaves were not listed in 1784, only the whites with the number of buildings.

**JACOB KISER’S COMPANY NO. 14**

East District of Rockingham county, just south of the Fairfax line and now in Page County and consists of names of persons closely associated with Massanutten. These names are taken from the personal property tax for 1792. The first column contains the number of sons above 16 or apprentices; the second, slaves above 16; third, slaves above 12 and fourth, horses, the chief article of taxation at that time. All white males above 21 were listed as tithables whether they had property or not. The entire county was divided into military companies and the taxes were levied by companies.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>W</th>
<th>B</th>
<th>B</th>
<th>H</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kite, Wm.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kite, Martin</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kite, Adam</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kite, Geo. Sr.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kite, Jno., Jr.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kite, Geo. Jr.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kite, Geo. Sr. and Daniel ab. 16</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kite, Philip and Cristian ab. 16</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oler, Wm.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oler, Henry</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oler, John</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fulce, John Sr.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fulce, David</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hufman, Henry</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fulce, John</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fulce, Sebastian</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strolls, Cristian</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Airy, Cutlip</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comer, Stophel</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berry, Mallekiah</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Berry, Archery</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peaksler, Crisley (Bixler evidently)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lang, John</td>
<td>Monger, David and George ab. 16</td>
<td>Dobeley, David, Sr.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*1</td>
<td>Jno. Strickler had one slave in 1800.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
It will be noted that there were very few slaves in Capt. Jacob Kiser's company. This list might appropriately be called the tithe list and horse tax. A farmer in that day could aptly be referred to as a 3 or a 4 horse farmer. This term is still used in some sections of the south. The taxes on horses evidently restricted the number of these animals to actual necessity. Silas Hart, one of the early Baptists in Rockingham, who made a will in favor of the education of Baptist ministers, had the only four wheeled carriage in Rockingham in 1792. It was called a "Chatilow," on the tax lists. This list is more complete than that found in the heads of families. Naturally it would include more names since it is six years later. The list from the heads of families covers territory to the Augusta line while this list probably does not go beyond the present Page county line. It covers Pitt Spring bend and vicinity.

UNITED STATES CENSUS IN "HEADS OF FAMILIES" SHENANDOAH COUNTY

The Neighbors of Jacob, Joseph, Isaac and Benjamin Strickler

The neighbors of Jacob, Joseph, Isaac and Benjamin Strickler, in 1783, can only be ascertained by giving the entire alphabetical list in which their names appear—second number indicates slaves. 1783 list.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>List By</th>
<th>List by Richard</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Alex. Hite—1783, pp. 65-66</td>
<td>Branham—1785, p. 105</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Astrip, John ............... 7</td>
<td>Atwill, John ............... 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atwell, John ............... 5</td>
<td>Ammon, Peter ............... 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alterfer, Antony .......... 10</td>
<td>Beever, Michael ........... 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Branham, Graydon .......... 5</td>
<td>Branham, Gaydon .......... 5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Branham, Richard ........ 6 &amp; 7</td>
<td>Brewbaker, Abraham ....... 10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brown, Thos ............... 8</td>
<td>Brewbaker, Abraham, Jun. 4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bolton, William .......... 7</td>
<td>Boswell, Jonathan ......... 7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brewbaker, Abram .......... 13</td>
<td>Boyer, Pholy ............... 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Count</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------------</td>
<td>-------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bidler, Abraham</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baker, Philip</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Broomback, Henry</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blowser, Abraham</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boyer, Felty</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burton, John</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bellis, Henry</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boraker, Daniel</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Collins, George</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, David, Sr.</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, David, Jr.</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, Martin</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Counts, John</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comer, Augustine</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Campbell, Jams</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comer, Martin</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comer, Fred</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comer, Michl., Sr.</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comer, Michl., Jr.</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, David</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comer, Philip</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comer, Adam</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carter, William</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, Martin</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, Chrisly</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Davis, William</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freez, John</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fassett, Joseph</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frimwood, Mathias</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Good, Gasper</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grove, Christian</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Finter, Boston</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Finter, Mathias</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>George, John</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grim, Jacob</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Goring, Michael</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hickman, Richard</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heaston, John</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harshburger, Chris.</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hill, Francis</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hite, Andrew</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baker, Jacob</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baker, Henry</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ballace, Henry</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Branham, Rehd.</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blawser, Peter</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boroker, Danl.</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bumgarner, Michael</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bair, Jacob</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comer, John</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crim, Jacob</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coomer, Michl.</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, David</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coomer, Philip</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coomer, Augustine</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coomer, Martin</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coomer, Adam</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coomer, Fredk.</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, David</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crump, George</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Decker, Adam</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Davis, Jonathan</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Finter, Mathias</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Finter, Fredk.</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frimoode, Mathias</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grove, Christian</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Going, Michael</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris, Wm.</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hite, John</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harris, James</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hite, Daniel</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hay, Alexander</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hite, Abraham</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Howbert, Nicholas</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hopewood, William</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judy, Jacob</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Killinger, Jacob</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linbark, Peter</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lung, George</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Linbark, John</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lung, Philip</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maggott, Margaret</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Year</td>
<td>Name</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1783</td>
<td>Hoke, William</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hay, Alexander</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Hight, Daniel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Huddell, Jacob</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Highmaster, Cutlip</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Harshburger, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jefferson, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Kiblinger, Jacob</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Kiger, Jacob</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Kiblinger, Daniel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lourderback, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lourderback, David</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lourderback, Joseph</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Long, Henry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Long, George</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Long, Margaret</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Long, Philip</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Limbarger, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Longmaker, Jacob</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lusany, Laurence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Lionburger, Peter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Musselman, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maggott, Christian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mauk, Daniel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maggott, Henry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maggott, David</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maggott, Benjamin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maggott, Margaret</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Newman, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Newman, Thos.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Nun, Whartin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Nelson, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Odell, Edward</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Overbocker, Fredk.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Overbocker, Mary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Overbocker, Barbara</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Price, Anger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Price, Richard</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Price, Edward, Jr.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Price, Edward</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Price, Zachariah</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1785</td>
<td>Maggott, David</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maggott, Benja.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maggott, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Mits, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maggott, Henry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>McGince, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Maggott, Christian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Musselman, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Nowman, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Nowman, Thomas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ofenbacker, Fredk.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ofenbacker, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Painter, Joseph</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Painter, Conrod</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Painter, Joshua</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pence, Lewis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pence, Barbey</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pibler, Lewis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pibler, Jacob</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pibler, Francis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pibler, Christian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pence, Henry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pence, Frederick</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Piper, Augustine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Prince, George</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Pence, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Proper, Nichos</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Prince, Cutilp</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Prince, Philip</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Prince, Goodfrie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Prince, Philip, Jun.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Richebaker, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Richebaker, Adam</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Roods, Joseph</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ruffner, Reubin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Roodcap, George</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Roodcap, Isaac</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Robinson, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sower, Polser</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Spitler, Jacob</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Sites, Andrew</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>1783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Price, Meridith</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Price, John</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Price, Thomas</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Painter, Conrad</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pence, Daniel</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pence, Henry</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piper, Augustine</td>
<td>4 &amp; 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pibler, Lewis</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pibler, Christian</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pibler, Jacob</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prince, George</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Painter, Joshua</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peters, Balsar</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prince, Cutlip</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prince, Philip</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prince, Godphrey</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prince, Philip, Jr.</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pence, Frederick</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pence, John</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Propes, Nicholas</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pence, Lewis</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roodcap, Peter</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Roodcap, George</td>
<td>14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rufner, Reubin</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rutherford, Robt.</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rudolph, Andrew</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robertson, John</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rufner, Peter</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rufner, Emanuel</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rukerboker, John</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rukerboker, Adam</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sparks, Austin</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strickler, Jacob</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strickler, Joseph</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strickler, Isaac</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shully, Christian</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strickly, Benjamin*</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Smith, John</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spitler, Jacob</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Evidently the same as Benjamin Strickler in list of 1785.*
### 1783

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Quantity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Spitler, Abraham</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Snider, Daniel</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stoneburger, Fredk.</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sowers, Henry</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sowers, Henry, Sr.</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shank, John</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stoneback, Fredk.</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sheets, George</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Snider, John</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sios, Andrew</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sower, Palsar</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fyre, William</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taylor, John</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vincent, Joseph</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wishett, John</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Widock, John</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wickle, Jacob</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Widock, Henry</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wise, Adam</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wise, Michael, Sr.</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wolf, George</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zigler, George</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Neighbors of Daniel, Abram, Abraham, Jr. and Abram Strickler according to a list taken by Alexander Hite in 1783. When a second figure is used, it indicates slaves. It will be noted that there were very few slaves at this date.

**Alex. Hite’s List, p. 64**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Quantity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Aleshite, Benedick</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aleshite, Jno. Conrad</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aleshite, Jacob</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aleshite, Henry</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Altre, Fredk.</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aleshite, Conrad</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Allen, John</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abel, Thomas</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burner, Jacob, Sr.</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beaker, Jacob</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barnitt, John</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Edwin Young’s List, p. 104**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Quantity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ailshite, John Conrod</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alter, Fredk.</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ailshite, Benedick</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ailshite, Conrod</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ailshite, Jacob</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bullington, Jno.</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bloser, Abrm.</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beam, Jno.</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beaver, John</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bumgarner, Peter</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bumgarner, David</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>1783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bullington, John</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bouser, Peter</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bumgamer, Chrisly</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Breeding, Jane</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beaker, Catherine</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bear, Jacob</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blazer, Bear</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Breeding, James</td>
<td>9 &amp; 2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beam, John</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barner, Chas.</td>
<td>4 &amp; 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bailey, John</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conn, Michael</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coleman, Jacob</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox, Jeremiah</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Combs, Solomon</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Combs, Job</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clevinger, Thos.</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Combs, Solomon</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Commer, John</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dodson, John</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deluney, James</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dotson, Thomas</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dodson, Samuel</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fox, William</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Foly, Selby</td>
<td>1 &amp; 3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flemming, William</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fox, Peter</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fugitt, Elizabeth</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fox, Allen</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grove, Marks</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greene, Jarves</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harding, Martin</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hugh, Ralph</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harding, Samuel</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heavens, John</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heastant, John</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heastant, Jacob</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heastant, Peter</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harding, Thomas</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hust, Absolum</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Burner, Joseph</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beaker, Phillip</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bumgamer, Christian</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Breeding, James, Sr.</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beever, Conrod</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beever, Christian</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barnett, John</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beever, Abn.</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cook, Henry</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cox, Jeremiah</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Countz, George</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Combs, Job</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Campbell, James</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Countz, Jacob</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Countz, John</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Combs, Solomon</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, Martin</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, David</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, Chrisly</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cofman, Martin (on the Hawksbill)</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dasher, Daniel</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dotson, Samuel</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Foley, Selby</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fox, Peter</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flemming, William</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frees, John</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grover, Six Barnard</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grover, Marks</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hapler, Jno.</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harshbarger, Isaac</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hawkins, Joseph</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Humback, Henry</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hockman, Mary</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hastans, Jacob</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Harshbarger, Christian</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heaston, Jacob, Jr.</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heaston, John</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Husk, Absolem</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hoke, William</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Haubers, Peter</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1783</td>
<td>1785</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------</td>
<td>----------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hockman, Mary</td>
<td>Hashbarger, Fredk.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hust, John</td>
<td>Humphrey, John</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hurberger, Fredk.</td>
<td>Harshbarger, Jno.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heplar, John</td>
<td>Hite, Andrew</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horskins, Joseph</td>
<td>James, George</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Huckerson, Henry</td>
<td>Jones, Mary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hurst, Elijah</td>
<td>Judge, Michl.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hamp, Chrisly</td>
<td>Kibber, Henry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gillock, Hannah</td>
<td>Kiser, Andrew</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ireland, James</td>
<td>Kiser, Charles</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jordon, Theodorns</td>
<td>Kibbling, Peter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>James, Thomas</td>
<td>Leeth, Ebenezer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Judge, Lettice</td>
<td>Lear, Jno.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jones, George</td>
<td>Mauk, Henry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Job, Moses</td>
<td>Neal, Jno.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Job, Enoch</td>
<td>Num, Wharton</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiser, Charles</td>
<td>Nelson, Jno.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kibler, Henry</td>
<td>Orback, Rudolph</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiser, Andrew</td>
<td>Pangle, Catherine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiblar, Peter</td>
<td>Rufner, Peter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kelly, Amey</td>
<td>Rufner, Mary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Levisque, John</td>
<td>Roadcap, Isaac</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lear, John</td>
<td>Roadcap, Peter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Leath, Ebinezar</td>
<td>Rufner, Benja.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McKay, Abrm.</td>
<td>Rufner, Joseph</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mathew, Madder</td>
<td>Stuart, Natha.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CeCoughlow, Will</td>
<td>Shock, Henry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McDonald, John</td>
<td>Shanks, Martin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Moody, Moses</td>
<td>Sowers, Fredk.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>McKoy, Jeremiah</td>
<td>Stump, Jacob</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nale, William</td>
<td>Shank, Windle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Night, Emanuel</td>
<td>Sheetz, Michl.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Noble, Coleman</td>
<td>*Stickler, Daniel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Noble, William</td>
<td>*Stickler, Isaac</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Odell, Elizabeth</td>
<td>Sisk, Thos.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Odell, Ann</td>
<td>Sumpback, Fredk.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Odell, James</td>
<td>Smith, William</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Odell, Leah</td>
<td>Tyler, William</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Evidently the same as Danil, Isaac and Abm. Junr. Strickler in list for 1783.*
1783

Pangle, Catherine .......................... 5
Phraise, Samuel .............................. 10
Stewart, Nathaniel ........................... 4
Shaver, Jacob ................................ 9
Shock, Henry .................................. 7
Strickler, Daniel .............................. 6
Strickler, Abram .............................. 8
Spoon, Conrad .................................. 5
Shank, Martin .................................. 8
Stumpback, Jacob ............................. 7
Stover, Samuel ................................. 10
Sandy, William ................................. 10
Strickler, Abraham, Jr. ..................... 6
Skelton, John .................................. 7
Skelton, Moses .................................. 4
Shank, Windle ................................. 3
Smith, Nathan .................................. 5
Tyler, William ................................. 3 & 3
Quinn, Patrick .................................. 6
Rufner, Benjamin .............................. 8
Strickler, Abram ............................. 6
Rhineheart, Michael .......................... 9
Trygler, Daniel ................................ 5
Wright, Isaac .................................. 8
Vann, Elizabeth ............................... 8
Wood, Nehemiah ............................... 10 & 4
Wood, John ..................................... 6
Wood, Samuel .................................. 8
Wiley, George .................................. 4
Young, Edwin ................................. 8 & 13
Youn, Sinnitt .................................. 9 & 1
Whitson, Ruth .................................. 6 & 1

1785

Taylor, Jno. .................................. 3
Varnhouser, Jacob ............................ 10
Varner, Philip .................................. 7
Vincent, Joseph ............................... 7
Underwood, George ........................... 1
Wright, Isaac Simson .......................... 8
Young, Edwin ................................. 7
Zisler, George ................................. 11

Probably neither the lists for 1783 or for 1785 are of themselves complete but taking them both together they probably are.

It seems that Alexander Hite took the entire lists for Shenandoah in 1783 but in 1785 there were 15 census takers, Alexander Hite being one of them. Hite may have been the chief and the others may have been his assistants. There is evidence that the lists were taken by various parties in 1783 from the fact that they appear in alphabetical groups.
The lists show duplication and variation of spelling.

About half of the counties of Virginia appear on the pension lists in Heads of Families and about half of those appear only once, that is under one year of the four census years, 1782-83-84-85. Frederick and Rockingham appear only once, Shenandoah appears twice and Augusta does not appear at all.

In the “Summary of the population of Virginia, by counties; 1790” all the counties appear. I will here give a few of the counties which indicates the method used also the proportion of slaves east and west of the Blue Ridge.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>County</th>
<th>1782-1783-1784-1785</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>males p.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shenandoah</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rockingham</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frederick Div.</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augusta-E. N. M.</td>
<td>2,048</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augusta-W. N. M.</td>
<td>551</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fairfax</td>
<td>85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Albemarle</td>
<td>50</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Frederick is listed twice as Augusta; Frederick Division and Frederick. F. N. M. means east of North Mountain and W. N. M. means west of that mountain.

First column—Free white males of 16 years and upward.
Second column—Free white males under 16 years.
Third column—Free white females.
Fourth column—All other free persons.
Fifth column—Slaves.
Sixth column—Total.

Population of the United States in 1790 was 3,893,651. Population of Virginia in 1790 was 747,601 of which 292,627 were slaves.

In 1790 Virginia had by far the largest population. Pennsylvania was next with a population of 434,373; North Carolina third with 393,751; Massachusetts fourth with 378,787; New York fifth with 340,120; and Maryland sixth with 319,728.

All the states reported slaves at this time except two, Maine and Massachusetts.
About half of the above named Counties appear only under one year and about half appear under two years of the four census years—1782-83-84-85.

About half of the counties in Virginia do not appear at all, the lists having been lost or destroyed.

The first four columns of figures refer to the pages in Heads of Families.

The two columns on the right represent the number of slaves and white persons in those counties in 1790 as found in the Heads of Families.

At this time the population of the United States was 3,893,635 and the population of Virginia was 747,601, of which 292,627 were slaves.

**THE MAP OF MASSANUTTEN**

I have prepared a map of the Stover’s Massanutten Patent which speaks for itself. This map was drawn from courses and distances taken from the original patent and from Stover’s grantees. The course of the river I took from the U. S. Government
MAP
SHOWING LOCATION OF FIRST SETTLEMENT IN THE SHENANDOAH VALLEY KNOWN AS MASSANUTTEN GRANT

---

Legend:
- ★ = Historical marker
- ▲ = Mountain peak
- ■ = Road
- ● = Settlement
- △ = River

---

Note: The map details the location of the first settlement in the Shenandoah Valley, known as the Massanutten Grant, with markers indicating key historical sites and features.
map. The old homes and many other places were guessed at but I believe that I have them pretty accurately located. I am not a map maker and when I made the map I did not do so with the idea of publishing it but when finished I thought it would be interesting to many people as it located definitely many of the first homes in Massanutten. Had I taken more time I could have improved on the lettering. My original map of course was much larger and much easier to read.

Lines on the map not used are: from t to v opposite the Hawksbill; from A to D at the beginning point above the mouth of the Hawksbill and from I to J in N. Mill Creek Bend. (This land was early owned by the Burners and that title could be traced easily no doubt); I did not find where the above lines were used in any of Stover's deeds. I may have overlooked these deeds or the lands contained within these lines may have been conveyed in Stover's deed to Stone which gives no boundaries but simply says that he conveys 1050 acres it being the "REMAINS OF A SARTAIN TRACT" containing 5,000 acres. (See deed No. 9).

If Stone received all the remains he received a bargain for he conveyed 800 acres in Long Bend to Long and 205 acres in East Bixler's Ferry Bend to the said Long. This leaves only 45 acres of the 1050 acres un conveyed. I am sure that there are more than 45 acres in three bottoms above referred to. Further search may reveal the true facts.

From a deed from Stone to Martin Kaufman in 1737 it would seem that Elk Lick was located near the lower side of Roads Bend but I am of the opinion that the Elk Lick was the same stream known as Lick Run or Lick Branch in lower Egypt.

Another puzzling feature is found in the fact that Stover in 1735 sold 550 acres in Long Bend to Christian Clemon and in 1737 Stover conveys this same Long Bend to Stone as 800 acres, in November and in March of the same year, several months prior there to Stone conveyed it to Long.

I do not have the entire deed before me. This might explain the apparent discrepancy. It may be that Clemon failed to fulfill the contract and the land was conveyed to Stone who conveyed it to Long. It may also be that the scrivener made a mistake in copying the bounds. Further search might clear all this up. It will be interesting to note that there was a fort cellar in each of the bends on the Massanutten Patent with few exceptions. It will be noticed that the patent took in only the better river bottom lands and skipped the rough bluffs at the bends of the river.
On the following pages will be found the deeds to the Massanutten tract. Each deed has a number which coincides with the number of the deed on the map. By following these numbers the deed can be easily located on the map. Some tracts have two or more numbers for the reason that the land was reconveyed shortly after the first conveyance. *

About this time Jacob Stauber (note the spelling) conveyed land to George Boon and also to John Ennis. (Orange Co. Records.)

GEORGE THE SECOND
Date: December 15, 1733

JACOB STOVER
Patent Book No. 15: Page 127
5,000 Acres.

STOVER'S UPPER PATENT, BELOW PORT REPUBLIC †

George the second &c. To all &c. Know ye that for divers good causes and Considerations—but more Especially for and in Consideration of the Importation of One Hundred persons to dwell within this our Colony and Dominion of Virginia whose Names are Jacob Miller, Catharine Mill(er), Abraham Miller, Christian Miller, Isaac Miller, Jacob Miller, Joseph Miller, Matthew Miller, Sarah Miller, Catherine Miller, Anna Miller, Susannah Miller, Barbary Miller, Dorothy Miller, Rachel Miller, Jacob Mire, Anna Mire, Isaac Mire, Abraham Mire, John Mire, Jacob Mire, Joseph Mire, Peter Mire, Geo. Mire, Calpins Mire, Christopher Mire, Anna Mire, Rachel Mire, Catherine Mire, Sarah Mire, Sarah Mire, Susannah Mire, Barbary Mire, Dorothy Mire, John Mire, Anna Mire, Jacob Mire, John Mire, Abraham Mire, Isaac Mire, Rosina Mire, Susanna Mire, Catherine Mire, Ragley Mire, Henry Sowder, Catherine Sowder, Henry Sowder, John Sowder, Isaac Sowder, Catherine Sowder, Anna Sowder, Rachel Sowder, Henry Sowder, Henry Hain, Christiana Hain, Jacob Haine, Henry Hain, Paul Hain, Rudy Hain, Joseph Hain, Peter Hain, Isaac Hain, John Hain, Hansrudy Hain, Stapher Hain, Susannah Hain, Rachel Hain, Barbary Hain, Ciaphi Hain, Margaret Haine, Elizabeth Hain, John Funk, Barbet Funk, Rudy Funk, Christopher Funk, John Funk, Matthew Funk, Joseph Funk, Isaac Funk, Peter Funk, David Funk, William Funk, Anna Funk, Christiana Funk, Trenly Funk, Robby Funk, Dorothy Funk, Jacob Sowder, Trina Sowder, Christian Sowder, John Sowder, Isaac Sowder, Rudy Sowder, Matthew Sowder, Stapher Sowder, Peter Sowder, Joseph Sowder, David Sowder, Jacob Sowder,

* For Stover patent see p. 30.
† This patent might appropriately be called the "Island Patent."
Jane Sowder, Dorothy Sowder and Christiana Sowder.* WE HAVE given granted and Confirmed and by these presents for us our Heirs and Successors do give grant and Confirm unto Jacob Stover One Certain Tract or parcel of Land Containing five Thousand Acres Lying and being in St. Marks parish in Spotsylvania County on the West side the Great Mountains and bounded as followeth (to wit) BEGINNING at Two black Walnuts and a Hickory on Sherando River under the foot of the Great Mountains and running thence E. 30 pole up to the foot of the mountain. Thence S. 37 Degrees W. 610 pole to the River thence up the Several Courses of the River to two Sycamors Thence S. 57 Degrees W. to the foot of a Naked Mountain at the upper end of a Large Island in the River. Thence N. 60 pole to a White Oak and a Hickory thence down the Several Courses of the said River to a Small Sycamore and Hickory below the foot of the said Island thence N. 55 Degrees W. 40 pole to a Spanish Oak thence 50 Degrees E. 72 Poles to three pines. Thence N. 66 Degrees E. 185 poles to three pines thence 38 Degrees E. 148 pole to three white Oaks & a red Oak. Thence N. 16 Degrees W. 82 pole to a red Oak and white oak thence 7 Degrees W. 290 pole to three Locust Trees Thence 72 Degrees W. 312 pole to a White Oak on a Hill Thence S. 33 Degrees W. 172 pole to a white Oak thence N. 85 Degrees W. 290 pole to three White Oaks Thence 82 Degrees W. 160 pole to three white Oak thence N. 5 Degrees W. 390 pole to three White Oak thence 15 Degrees E. 88 pole to two red two white Oaks and a Locust thence 75 Degrees E. 310 pole to three white Oaks, thence S. 50 Degrees E. 210 pole to a Pine thence N. 83 Degrees E. 340 poles to three white Oaks thence S. 39 Degrees E. 160 poles to two white Oaks thence S. 70 poles to two red Oaks thence S. 25 Degrees W. 195 pole to two red and a white Oak on a Hill thence N. 52 Degrees E. 212 pole to two pines and a black Oak thence S. 50 Degrees E. 310 poles to three pines thence S. 71 Degrees E. 144 poles to three pines thence N. 62 Degrees E. 120 pole to a red Oak on a Hill thence 43 Degrees E. 130 pole to a pine thence N. 55 Degrees E. 140 pole to a pine. Thence N. 40 Degrees E. 80 pole to the begining. WITH ALL &c. To have hold &c. To be held &c. Yielding and paying &c. Provided &c. In Witness &c. Witness our Trusty and Welbeloved William Gooch Esqr. our Lieut. Govr. and Comander in Chief of our said Colony and Dominion at Williamsburgh under the Seal of our said Colony the fifteenth day of December One Thousand Seven Hundred and Thirty three In the Seventh Year of our Reign

William Gooch.

* It has been suggested that Stover named his cows, horses and dogs in his patents. I do not know where the authority for this is derived. I am inclined to believe that these people all existed in Pennsylvania and the parents and their children were named, altho all were not transported.

† If this had been written in full it would have, no doubt, contained the expression "To be held in free and common soccage."
I hereby certify that the foregoing is a true copy from the records of this office.

Witness my hand and seal of office, this 18th day of September, 1924.

Jno. W. Richardson,
Register of the Land Office.

The homes of the following noted persons of Rockingham County were no doubt on this patent: The home of Thos. Lewis, who ran the Fairfax line, of Lewiston, Bogota, the home of Gabriel Jones, the king’s attorney, (the first Commonwealth’s Attorney for Rockingham County and one of the first if not the first attorney in Valley of Virginia) and “Lethe”, the home of Peachy Gilmore, a magnificent brick residence now occupied by Mrs. Edward B. Hopkins. Bogota is also a magnificent brick residence now occupied by Dr. A. S. Kemper. Madison Hall, also of brick the home of Bishop James Madison, the first Episcopal Bishop of Virginia, is located at Port Republic and was on or near this patent. Gabriel Jones’ inventory was filed in Rockingham County in 1822. It is interesting and I wish I had room to copy it. There are many books listed. Fifty three negroes are listed. He evidently had the greatest number of negroes in the County. Here are some of the books: Boyles Sermons, 3 Vol. in calf; Harlean Miscellanys, 7 vol.; Life of Peter, the first; Rowland Mond Antiquities; Foster of Natural Religion, 2 vol.; Chas. ye 12th of Swended; Maitland’s Hist. of London, 2 vol.; Raphine’s Hist. of England, 2 vol. with plates; Hist. of Europe, 17 vol.; Law of Attorneys; Vindication of the primitive Church; An Original Draught of the Primitive Church; A Review of the Cities and Towns of England; Treatise on the Quakers; Periguin Pickle; Tom Jones; Spectator; Moyles Works; Beggars Opera; Gil Blass; South’s Sermons; Addison’s Works; Ben Johnson’s Works; Popes Works; Platos Works; Letters of the Spirit of Patriotism; Swift’s Works; The World by Adam Fitz Adam; A Tour through Britain, 4 vol.; Chases Trial; An Abridgement of Virginia Laws by Mercer; Wm. Law’s Answer; Burnet on True Religion; Clark’s Divinity, 2 vol.; in fact his library must have contained all the classics on every subject, law, religion, politics, and philosophy. I have named only a few.
No. 2

JACOB STOVER

Dec. 15, 1735

D. B. 1 p. 200-201

400 acres, 400 acres

& 300 acres in Orange Co.

LUDWICK STONE

on Gerundo River. *

The first piece containing four hundred acres and bounded as followeth viz: Beginning at Black Oak standing on the north side of Gerundo thence N. 60 pole th N. 15 E. 480 pole th N. 80 E. 68 pole th S. five E. 600 pole to a black walnut and hickory on the river corner to Mathias Selsor th up the said river to the first station. The other tract containing 400 acres Beg: at a walnut and mulberry on the river th N. 17 W. 598 pole thence N. 80 E. 68 pole thence S. 30 E. 580 pole to two white oaks and two black oaks on the river corner to Mathias Selser thence up the said river to the first station.

The third tract containing 300 acres bounded as followeth Viz: Beg: at two sycamores standing on the river thence N. 100 pole thence N. 43 W. 180 pole thence N. 17 E. 120 pole then N. 35 E. 28 pole thence N. 60 E. 52 pole thence E. 60 pole th S. 70 E. 50 pole to a corner white on the river thence up the said river the several courses to the beginning."

A Copy-Teste:

J. W. Browning, Clerk.

June 17th 1922.

No. 3

JACOB STOVER

Dated Dec. 15, 1735

D. B. 1 p. 203-204.

200, a. 200 a. & 100 a.

MATHIAS SELZER

in Orange Co. ♡

The first tract bounded as followeth viz: Beg at Black Walnut and hickory on the river corner to Ludwick Stone thence N. 5 W. 600 pole thence N. 80 E. 34 pole thence S. 17 W. 598 pole to a walnut and mulberry on the river thence up the river to the beginning. The second tract Beg: at a black walnut and hickory on the river th N. 30 W. 580 poles then N. 80 E. 34 pole thence S. 30 E. 542 poles to the river thence up

* 400 A. Massanutten Bend.
400 A. Massanutten Bend.
300 A. Roads Bend.
† The original of these deeds have few abbreviations, but I have abbreviated the courses and distances.
‡ 200 A. Mass. Bend.
100 A. W. Bixler’s Ferry Bend.
the said river to the beg. The third tract beg: at a black walnut on
the river th N. 23 E. 180 pole th N. S. E. 150 pole th N. 75 E. 112 pole to
the river thence up the several courses of the said river to the beginning.

A Copy-Teste:
J. W. Browning, Clerk.
June 17th, 1922.

No. 4

JACOB STOVER

to
JOHN PRUPECKER (Brubaker)

300 a. and 200 a. in
Orange Co., Va.*

"Two certain tracts or parcells of land situate and being on Gerundo
river the one tract containing three hundred acres and bounded as fol-
loweth vizt. beginning at a hickory and two sycamores standing on the
north side Gerundo adjoining to Mathias Selzer th N. 30 W. 542 pole th
N. 80 E. 112 pole thence S. 30 E. 414 pole to the river thence up the river
according to the courses to the first station. The other tract of 200
acres and bounded as followes vizt. Begd. at a white and sugar nut
tree standing on the north side of Gerundo th south 37 W. 73 pole thence
N. 82 E. 160 pole S. 60 E. 160 pole th; N. 100 pole thence to two corner
sycamores on the river th up the said river to the first station."

A Copy-Teste:
J. W. Browning, Clerk.
June 17th, 1922.

No. 5

JACOB STOVER

to
HENRY SOUTER

300 a. in Orange County. †

"A certain tract or parcell of land lying and being on the South side
Gerundo containing Three hundred acres and bounded as follows vizt.
Beginning at a corner black oak standing on the South side Gerundo
thence S. 20 E. 140 pole th S. 60 E. 48 pole th S. 30 E. 20 pole th

* 300 A. Mass. Bend.
† 300 A. Upper Roads Bend.
‡ 300 A. White House Bend.
See deed No. 11. This same tract was conveyed to Martin Kaufman.
EGYPT TRACT—INDIAN CORN DEED *

This Indenture made the fifteenth day of December in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and thirty five Between Jacob Stover of Orange County St. Marks parish of the one part and Abraham Strickler of the Province of Pennsylvania of the other part WITNESSETH that the said Jacob Stover for and in consideration of five shillings of Lawfull Currt. Money of Virga. to him in hand paid by the said Abraham Strickler before the ensealing and delivery of these presents the receipt the said Jacob Stover doth acknowledge doth demise grant bargain sell and to farm let unto the said Abraham Strickler his heirs and assigns forever a certain parcel or tract of land situate and being at Massanutten on Gerando containing one thousand acres and bounded as followeth vigh. Begi. at a corner black walnut and sycamore on the north side of Gerundo thence N. 30 W. 414 poles thence N. 80 E. 144 poles thence to a corner white oak on the river th down the sd river to a corner white oak and black oak th N. 39 E. 520 pole to a corner walnut on the river th down the said river to a corner white oak th N. 60 E. 129 pole thence N. 82 E. 20 pole th N. 17 W. to the river then up the said river according to the courses to the beginning Together with all houses buildings, waters, privileges and appurtenances whatsoever to the said land and premises belonging or in any wise appertaining.

To Have and to Hold the said land and premises hereby devised with their and every of their appurtenances unto the said Abraham Strickler his heirs and assigns from the day of the date of these presents for and during the term of one whole year from thence next coming and fully to be completed Yielding and paying therefor the yearly rent of ear of Indian corn on the feast of St. Michael only if the same be lawfully demanded To the intent and purpose that the said Abraham

* See deed No. 20 "Peper Corn deed. This tract extends up into lower Mass. Bend and contains all of Egypt Bend."
Strickler may by of these presents and of the statute made for transferring uses into possession be lawfully possessed of the said land and premises and hereby be enabled to have take and receive a grant of inheritance and fee simple from the said Jacob Stover his heirs &c. unto the said Abraham Strickler his heirs and assigns forever In Witness whereof the parties to these present indentures have interchangeably set their hand and seals the day month and year first above written.

Signed Sealed & Delivered
in presence of
John Branham
Gideon Marr *
Wm. Terrell

At a Court held for Orange County on Tuesday the 16th day of December 1735 Jacob Stover acknowledged this his Lease of Land indented to Abraham Strickler which on his motion is admitted to record.

Teste: Henry Willis Cl Cur,
A Copy-Teste: J. W. Browning, Clerk.
June 12, 1922.

No. 7

JACOB STOWER

to

PETER BOWMAN

Recorded Sept. 21, 1736
D. B. 1 p. 393 Orange Co. Records.

"Tract or parcell of land containing four hundred acres lying and being on the west side of Sherendo River in Orange County, it being part of a tract of five thousand acres granted to Jacob Stover by patent dated ......................... it likewise being a part of ye tract of land that Jacob Stover now lives on, Beginning at three black walnuts on the River thence N. 250 poles thence E. 200 poles thence S. 250 poles to the River thence up ye several courses of ye River to the beginning." *

A Copy-Teste:

J. W. Browning, Clerk.

* This tract is evidently part of the upper 5,000 acre patent, the Island patent, near Port Republic.
No. 8

JACOB STOVER

to

CHRISTIAN CLEMON

Recorded Sept. 16, 1735 in Clerk's
office of Orange Co. Va. D. B. 1
P. 152 550 A. Long Bend.

"Containing five hundred and fifty acres situate lying and being in
the County of Orange and on the south side Gerundo river and bounded
as followeth vigt. Beginning at two ashes two poplars and a chestnut
oak on an island in the said Gerundo River and running thence S. 30
degrees E. 30 poles thence S. 10 degs: E. 360 pole thence S. W. 100 pole
thence S. E. 160 pole thence S. W. to the said Stovers upper Corner of
his lower five thousand tract on a small run thence down the several
courses of the said Run to Gerundo River thence down the sevrnl. courses
of the said River to the beginning." *

A Copy-Teste:

J. W. Browning, Clerk.

No. 9

JACOB STOVER

to

LUDEWICK STONE

Recorded Nov. 24, 1737 Orange Co.
records, in D. B. 1 Page 190.

1050 acres, f

"All that tract or parcell of land situate lying & being in the Coun­
ty of Orange afd. containing by estimation one thousand and fifty acres
it being the remains of certain tract of land containing five thousand
acres lying on the South Branch of Sharrando River and known by ye
name of Mesenuting tract."

A Copy-Teste:

J. W. Browning, Clerk.

No. 10

LUDWIG STONE

to

MICHAEL COFFMAN.

Date Febry. 23rd 1736
D. B. 1 page 425-426

217 acres in Orange County.
Mass. Bend.

"Two hundred and seventeen acres of land situate and being on
Gerundo River and bounded as followeth Beginning at two black wal-

* In 1737 this same tract of land was conveyed by Stover to Stone as 800 acres.
See deeds Nos. 9 and 12. Clemon probably did not fulfill the conditions and Stover
re-conveyed it. I do not have the entire deed before me which might explain this
point. The bearings are the same as those in deed No. 12. See also No. 9.
† This deed conveys Long Bend; E. Bixler's Ferry Bend and other lands, in­
cluding probably N. Mill Creek Bend and lands just above the mouth of the Hawks­
bill on both sides of the river. See deed No. 12 and 8.
nuts and two sycamores on the north side Gerundo river thence N. W. 480 pole to a corner thence N. 80 E. 40 pole to a corner thence S. 30 E. 500 poles black walnut and hickory on the river thence up the courses of the said river to the beginning."

A Copy-Teste:
J. W. Browning, Clerk.
June 19th, 1922.

No. 11

LUDWICK STONE to MARTIN COFFMAN.

"Three parcells or tracts of land situate lying and on Gerundo river in Orange County the first tract lyes on the southside Gerundo containing three hundred acres Beginning at a corner black oak on the said river th: S. 20 E. 140 poles th: S. 60 E. 48 pole th S. 30 E. 20 pole th: S. 25 W. 78 pole th: S. 60 W. 50 pole th: 30 W. 106 pole to the river thence up ye sd. river to the beginning The second tract is on the N. side Gerundo and begins at Mathias Selzers corner on the river and runs N. 8 W. 560 pole to corner two white oaks and an ash th: N. 80 E. 48 poles to corner thence S. 7 E. 540 pole to River th: down the said river to the beg. The third tract is one hundred acres of land part of two hundred acres that was granted to the said Stone by deed from Jacob Stover and lies down upon Gerundo at Elk Lick joynes to Prupeckers lower tract."

A Copy-Teste:
J. W. Browning, Clerk.
June 19th, 1922.

No. 12

LUDWICK STEIN to PHILLIP LONG

"All those two tracts or parcells of land situate lying and being in the County of Orange on Sharrendo River containing by estimation one thousand & five acres be same more or less one tract containing 800 acres & the other 205 acres which is bounded thus beginning at the river at a forked ash and running thence S. 22 deg W. 140 pol th S. 14

A Copy-Teste:
J. W. Browning, Clerk.
June 19th, 1922.

* 300 A. White House Bend, same track as in deed No. 5. Souter forfeited it probably.
100 A. Road’s Bend—Elk Lick tract.
deg 130 pole th south 61 deg W. 110 poles to the river thence with the river to the beginning this contains 205 acres the other tract bounded thus beginning at the river two black oaks running th S. 30 E. 30 poles th S. 10 deg E. 360 poles th S. W. 30 pole th S. 160 pole th S. W. 160 poles to a branch thence down ye same to ye river & down the river to the beginning.*

A Copy-Teste:
J. W. Browning, Clerk.
June 19 1922.

No. 13

ABRAM STRICKLER to JACOB BOWMAN

Metes and Bounds of 100 acres
1743

"Containing one hundred acres more or less being part of One Thousand & thirty three acres sold by Jacob Stover to Abraham Strickler afd. Beginning at a stony run ye lower end of ye sd. 1033 acres No. 60 deg. E. 120 pole to two white oaks thence N. 82 E. 26 pole near three white oak saplings thence N. 17 W. to ye river to two white wood saplings joyning to Prupeckers land thence up the river to the begin-
ing." †

A Copy-Teste:
J. W. Browning, Clerk.

No. 14

LUDWIG STEIN (STONE) to MICHAEL CRYTER

No. 14 on map
Feb. 23-24, 1736,
217-200-100 A. ‡

The first tract contains 217 acres and lies between Mathias Selser and Michael Coffman.

The second tract is the uppermost of the Massanutten Lots and joins at the upper side of Martin Coffman's upper tract and contains 200 acres.

* See deed No. 8 and No. 9.
800 A. Long Bend.
205 A. E. Bixler's Ferry Bend.
† This land is at Lick Run, called here Stony Run.
‡ 217 A. Mass. Bend.
200 A. Mass. Bend uppermost lot.
100 A. Lower Roads Bend.
The third tract is a 100 acre tract adjoining Martin Coffman's tract at Elk Lick and Pruppecker's lower tract. The lines of the upper tract are; from the river N. 5 E. 490, N. 80 E. 48, S. 7 E. 540 to the river and up the same to the beginning. The description in this deed I obtained from Wayland's Ger. El., p. 61.

Elk Lick is the stream entering the river near lower Egypt, no doubt. It is now known as Lick Run or Lick Branch. The flat bottom up on this branch is known as Lick Bottom Hollow. This is the place the early settlers lay in wait for deer.

No. 15

LOCUST GROVE OR STONE HOUSE TRACT

FAIRFAX  

March 2, 1761, 34th year of George II.  

to  

D. B. K-p. 239-Richmond. Annual Rent 1 Shilling

ISAAC STRICKLER  

183 Acres

The Right Honorable Thomas Lord Fairfax Baron of Cameron in that part of Great Britain called Scotland Proprietor of the Northern Neck of Virginia to all to whom the present writing may come sends greeting.

Whereas Isaac Strickler of the County of Frederick, having represented to my office that he is in possession of a certain parcel of land being part of a Tract of 5,000 acres granted to Jacob Stover by Patent dated the 15th day of December, 1733, 1,000 acres of which the said Stover sold and conveyed to Abraham Strickler, dec'd., who by his last Will and Testament devised the same to be divided among his several sons as may fully appear by the records of Orange County Court, and the said Isaac Strickler having moved for my Deed to include his part or Dividend of the said purchase as his property by Discent from the said Abraham.

Know ye that for the causes aforesaid for and in consideration of the Annual Rent hereinafter reserved I have given, granted and confirmed by these presents me my Heirs and Assigns Do give, grant and confirm unto the said Isaac Strickler the said Recited Tract or Dividend of Land lying in a place called Massiuttin on the So. River of Shanandoah in the said County of Frederick and bounded by a survey thereof made by George Hume as follows; Beginning at two hiccorys and a black walnut standing on the No. side of the sd. River thence down the several courses of the same No. 7 W. 20 poles No. 9 E. 40 poles No. 22 E. 80 poles No. 50 E. 50 poles to a white oak and spanish on the said River against an Island, then No. 60 W. 110 poles to a red oak, then No. 60 160 poles to two white oaks, then No. 10 W. 30 poles
MASSANUTTEN 133

...to a white oak then So. 3—384 poles to the Beginning, containing 183 Acres of Land together with all Rights, Members and Appurtenances thereunto belonging Royal Mines excepted—third part of all lead, Copper, Coal, Iron Mines and Iron Ores that shall be found thereon To have and to hold the said 183 Acres of Land Together with all the Rights Profits and Benefits thereunto belonging or in any wise thereunto appertaining Except before Excepted To him the said Isaac Strickler his Heirs and Assigns forever. He the said Isaac Strickler his Heirs and Assigns therefor yielding and paying to me my Heirs or Assigns, or to my certain Attorney or Attorneys Agent or Agents or the certain Attorney or Attorneys of my Heirs or Assigns, Proprietors of the said Northern Neck yearly and every year on the feast day of St. Michael the Archangel the fee rent of one shilling sterling money for every fifty Acres of Land hereby granted and so proportionably for a greater or lesser quantity, Provided that, if the said Isaac Strickler his Heirs or Assigns shall not pay the said provided annual Rent as aforesaid so that the same or any part thereof shall be behind or unpaid by the space of two whole years after the same shall become Due if Legally Demanded that then it shall and may be lawfully for me my Heirs or Assigns, Proprietors as aforesaid my or their certain Attorney or Attorneys Agent or Agents into the above granted Premises to Reenter and hold the same so as if this Grant had never passed. Given at my Office in the County of Fairfax within my said Proprietary under my hand and Seal Dated this second day of March in the thirty fourth year of His Majesty King George the second's Reign A. D. One Thousand seven hundred and sixty one. (Signed) Fairfax.

(Registered in the proprietor's Office in Book K. folio 239.)

The original deed of which the above is a copy, is in the possession of Mrs. Virginia S. Milbourne of Charles Town, W. Va. It conveys land that adjoined Benjamin Strickler's dividend of the 1,000 acres. She also has a deed from Fairfax, dated March 3, 1761, to Isaac Strickler conveying 78 acres at the bend of the river.

No. 16

TRACT OPPOSITE THE WHITE HOUSE

FAIRFAX Nov. 22, 1756.

to

BENJAMIN STRICKLER

N. N. Grants—BK. "H", p. 743-
Richmond.

201 Acres in Culpeper County.

The right Honorable Thomas Lord Fairfax, Baron of Cameron in that part of Great Britain call'd Scotland Proprietor of the Northern Neck of Virginia: To all to whom these presents shall come sends
Greeting: Know ye that for good causes for & in consideration of the Composition To me paid & for the annual Rent hereinafter Reserved, I have given granted and confirmed & by these presents for me and my Heirs & Assigns Do give grant and confirm unto Benjamin Strickler of Culpeper—County a certain Tract of waste & ungranted Land in the said County & at a place commonly known by the name of Mesonuthin & bounded as by a Survey thereof made by George Hume as follows BEGINNING.

The description to this land is found in the following deed from Benjamin Strickler and Mary, his wife, to Abraham Strickler, on Aug. 30-31, 1785. It is the same tract of land located opposite the White house. *

No. 17

BENJAMIN STRICKLER AND MARY, HIS WIFE, to ABRAHAM STRICKLER Aug. 30-31, 1785.


201 Acres, the same having been conveyed by Fairfax to Benjamin Strickler.

No. 17 (16 on Map) †

500 pounds.

Description

A tract of land in Shenandoah County formerly Frederick in a place called Massenothin and was granted to the said Benjamin Strickler by Fairfax, No. 22, 1756, and bounded by a survey as made by George Hume as follows:

Beginning at a white oak and spanish oak on the north side of the Shenandoah River and being the dividing corner between Benjamin Strickler and Isaac Strickler against an island and runneth down the several courses of the river N. 50 E. 10 p.; E. 74 p.; N. 40 E. 48 p.; N. 35 W. 20 p.; N-W. 14 p.; N. 55 W. 20 p.; to a white oak on the river bank S. 85 W. 160 p. to a white oak corner to Isaac Strickler and with his line S. 10 E. 30 p.; S. 68 E. 160 p.; S. 40 E. 110 p. to the Beginning.

On June 10, 1794, Ann Strickler, widow and relict of Abraham Strickler, dec'd., and Jacob Strickler, eldest son of the said Abraham, dec'd. convey this tract to Abraham Strickler, son of Joseph. (D. B. I, p. 369, June 10, 1794, Woodstock). Abraham Strickler, dec'd. was the head of the family which has the ancient Bible. Abraham Strickler, the grantee, was the son of Joseph of Egypt.

* There is a very old home, of logs and a log barn on the hill opposite the White House on this tract. There is also a very old grave yard here east of the house on an oval hill.

† Same tract as No. 16.
FAIRFAX to JOSEPH STRICKLER

Nov. 9, 1756


55 Acres in Frederick Co. Egypt.

The Right Honorable Thomas Lord Fairfax Baron of Cameron in that part of Great Britain call'd Scotland, Proprietor of the Northern Neck of Virginia: To all to whom this present writing shall come sends Greeting; Know ye that for good causes for and in consideration of the Composition to me paid & for the Annuall Rent hereinafter Reserved I have given granted and confirm'd & and by these presents for me my Heirs & Assigns Do give grant & Confirm unto Joseph Strickler of Freder­rick—County a certain Tract of waste & ungranted Land in the said County, & bounded as by a Survey thereof made by George Hume as follows BEGINNING on North side of the Shenandoah River by the mouth of a small branch runneth thence down the several courses of the said river,

N. 70 E. 150 poles
E. 26 poles to a walnut on the said Shenandoah River thence N. 10 W. 100 poles to three white oaks in the back line, thence S. W. 210 poles to the beginning, containing fifty-five acres, etc. etc.

By a resurvey Joseph Strickler obtains 105 acres at this point, including the above 55 acres. The description is as follows;

One hundred and five acres of land bounded by a resurvey as fol­lows: Beginning at four white oaks on north bank of the river six poles up the river from the mouth of a small branch then down the several courses of the river, N. 65 E. 102 poles

N. 76 E. 44 poles
N. 88 E. 38 poles
N. 71 E. 60 poles to a black walnut on the north bank of the river, corner to Jacob Strickler, then, leaving the river and along Jacob Strickler's line,

N. 12 W. 150 poles to three white oaks on south­east side of a hill corner to the said Jacob Strickler in the back line of a patent tract from the Kings Office granted to Abraham Strickler for one thousand acres and then along the line S. W. 303 poles to the be­ginning, etc. etc.

(Dated 1776—Commonwealth to Joseph Strickler—Bk. "Q" p. 27 Richmond, Dunmore Co.)
FAIRFAX

Jan. 4, 1755

to

JACOB STRICKLER *


208 Acres in Augusta Co. Egypt.

The Right Honorable Thomas Lord Fairfax Baron of Cameron in that part of Great Britain call'd Scotland Proprietor of the Northern Neck of Virginia: To all to whom this presents writing shall come sends Greeting: Know ye that for good causes for and in Consideration of the Composition to me paid and for the Annual Rent hereafter reserved I have given granted and confirm'd and by these presents for me my Heirs and Assigns do give grant and confirm unto—Jacob Strickler of the County of Augusta—a certain Tract of waste and ungranted Land in the aforesaid County, and being part of a Pattent formerly granted to Jacob Stover for Five Thousand Acres, Dated the Fifteenth day of December, 1733, and bounded as by a Survey thereof made by Mr. George Hume—as followeth—Beginning at a black walnut standing on the north side of the Shenandoah River and dividing corner between the said Jacob Strickler and Joseph Strickler and runneth down the several courses of said river, E. 28 poles

N. 70 E. 170 poles
N. 40 E. 40 poles
N. 20 E. 20 poles
N. 74 poles
N. 30 W. 26 poles
N. 42 W. 46 poles
N. 55 W. 16 poles
N. 69 W. 20 poles, to an old corner, black walnut, Hickory and elm on riverside, thence
S. W. 228 poles to three white oaks, corner in Abraham Strickler line, then
S. 10 E. 100 poles to the beginning, containing two hundred and eight acres, etc. etc.

No. 20

"PEPERCORN" DEED

MARTIN KAUFMAN AND MARY


HIS WIFE

1767

JOHN STRICKLER

287 Acres in the point of Fairfax Bend.

Beginning at a large pinocle on a high cliff by Shenandoah thence S. 44 E. 100 poles to two red oaks standing on a steep hill and cliff

* Jacob probably obtained 100 acres by a resurvey as did his brother Joseph, by removing his back line further from the river.
thence up Shenandoah River S. 44 W. 134 poles to a white oak and gum by the River side in the line dividing the land between the King and the Right Honorable Thomas Lord Fairfax thence with the said dividing line S. 46 degrees E. 160 poles to two pines and a white oak, thence leaving the said line N. 44 degrees E. 200 poles to a black walnut, two Spanish oaks in a valley thence, N. 46 degrees W. 190 poles to a large white oak, chestnut, locust and dogwood by a large rock thence N. 32 degrees E. 6 poles to the river thence with the river, the several courses thereof namely; North 45 degrees W. 48 poles north 37 degrees W. 100 poles N. 5 degrees 30 minutes W. 18 poles S. 37 degrees W. 29 poles, S. 19 degrees W. 20 poles, S. 9 degrees 30 minutes E. 40 poles S. 24 degrees E. 26 poles S. 39 degrees 30' E. 28 poles S. E. 16 poles to the beginning.

This further designation precedes the above description:

"A tract of land held under deed from the Right Honorable Thomas Lord Fairfax made to Michael Coffman in the name of the Orphans of Martin dec'd of whom the above named Martin Coffman is heir at law which said deed bears date the 3rd day of Feb. 1755." A yearly rent of one peper corn * at the feast of St. Michael the Archangel if the same shall be lawfully demanded, is reserved.

This tract is located on the right bank of the river just north of the Fairfax line and between that line and the river, the tract occupying all the land in the immediate bend north of the line.

**BRITISH CROWN GRANTS OR PATENTS**

We have noticed how the Fairfax patents ran. It might be interesting to note how the patents from the Colonial Government ran. Here is one dated 1751. The opening paragraph is as follows:

"GEORGE the second by the Grace of God of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King Defender of the Faith etc. TO ALL TO WHOM these Presents shall come Greeting; Know Ye that for divers good causes and considerations but more especially for and in consideration of the sum of FORTY SHILLINGS of good and lawful money for our use paid to our Receiver General of our Revenues in this our Colony and Dominion of Virginia WE HAVE Given Granted and Confirmed and by these Presents for our Heirs and Successors Do Give and Confirm unto" etc. ......

"With the Privileges of Hunting Hawking Fishing Fowling and all other Profits Commodities and Hereditaments" etc. ......

Then follows the location and nature of the tenure.

* See Deed No. 6—Indian Corn Deed.
“TO BE HELD of us our Heirs and Successors as of our Manor of East Greenwich in the County of Kent in Free and Common Socage and not in Capite or by Knight Service” ....

Then follows the yearly rent and conditions.

“YIELDING AND PAYING unto us our Heirs and Successors for every fifty Acres of land and so Proportionably for a lesser or greater Quantity than fifty Acres the fee Rent of one Shilling Yearly to be paid upon the feast of Saint Michael the Arch Angel and also cultivating and improving three Acres part of every fifty of the tract above mentioned within three years after the Date of these Presents.”

Then follows a provision of forfeiture in the event of the breach of any of the conditions. And the closing paragraph is as follows: “Witness our Trusty and Well beloved Lewis Burwell Esq. President of our Council and Commander in Chief of our said Colony and Dominion at Williamsburg under the Seal of our said Colony the Twentieth Day of September One Thousand Seven hundred and fifty one in the twenty fifth year of our Reign.

LEWIS BURWELL.”

The above land was located in Augusta County, later in Rockingham County.

At this date, we learn from the opening paragraph, England still claimed France. Edward III in 1328 first made this claim by virtue of his mother, the daughter of King Philip. England retained more or less control over parts of France until the celebrated Joan of Arc inspired the French to expel the English in 1429. The French gained control of all their territory except Calais which was lost to the English in 1558 after being in the hands of the English for 200 years it being the last relic of Edward’s claim. So two hundred years after this date George II is still King of France by the Grace of God. Joan of Arc was taken prisoner by the Burgundains, sold to the English who burned her at the stake at Rouen on May 30, 1431, and threw her ashes into the Seine. Schiller immortalized her in his drama, “The Maid of Orleans”, published about 1799.

Besides being King, George II has a title “Defender of the Faith.” This title was bestowed upon Henry VIII by Pope Leo as a reward for Henry’s book against Martin Luther in 1521 and it has been used by the kings of England ever since. Strange to say it was this same Henry who obtained an Act of parliament setting aside the authority of the Pope in England. This rupture
arose out of the divorce of Henry from his first wife Catherine which the Pope did not recognize. It was not Henry’s desire to change his religion. He simply wanted to be head of the church in England.

It was Queen Mary, I believe, who said “when I die you will find Calais written on my heart.”

**HAWKING**

We notice the grantee is given the right, among other privileges, to hawk and fowl. Hunting with a hawk was a very common method in the early days and is practiced in Europe by sportsmen even today. The specie of hawks used in this sport is called a falcon. They are very powerful and swift and are used to hunt birds and rabbits. Falconry is an old sport and it was the favorite pastime of the princes and nobles in the middle ages. One of the kings of Germany was known as “Henry the Fowler” from the fact that he was much addicted to the sport of hawking (or falconry). The invention of firearms was the cause of the abandonment of the sport.

**COUNTY OF KENT**

It seems that all Virginia was at this time a part of the County of Kent in England and a part of the Manor of East Greenwich. I presume this is the same Greenwich from which the longitude on all our maps is computed which is located near London in County Kent and is a parliamentary borough of England.

**FREE AND COMMON SOCCAGE**

This expression is somewhat analogous to our present expression fee simple: in that it determines the nature of the title. The expression “Fee simple” means absolute, without conditions. The ancient word soccage is spelled with a double c in the old deed I have before me. It is derived from a Saxon word, soc, meaning liberty or privilege. Anciely the tenant held his lands of the lord by reason of some service rendered especially knight’s service which was a military service. Knight’s service was abolished in England and turned into “free and common socage” and most of the lands in England today are held under this ancient tenure. Many, if not all, of the crown grants made in the United States
prior to the revolution, created the same tenure but were abolished by the various states.

**SOCAGE**

Its chief feature was its certainty. The yearly rent may have been simply a rose yet it was a certain service. In some tenements the service was to be a hangman. In the above deed the service was certain being one shilling for every fifty acres yearly and the improvement of a certain number of acres. In a deed from Fairfax to Michael Kaufman one pepercorn was the rental value mentioned. * Lord Fairfax reserved the right to collect a nominal yearly rental at the feast of Saint Michael the Arch Angel. I presume he never demanded it. I find one deed, where one K unston or Hundson died without heirs in Massanutten and the land escheated (reverted) to Lord Fairfax and Fairfax issued another patent to Samuel Stover. See map.

Kercheval states that Fairfax charged ten Shillings on each fifty acres, (composition money), cash, and two shillings per hundred acres annual rent.

**A FEE SIMPLE DEED**

Here is a modern deed in Virginia. It is much simpler than the old forms. This is a fee simple deed, and very simple indeed. 

**THIS DEED,** made this 23d. day of September, 1924, by and between Richard Roe, party of the first part, and John Doe party of the second part;

* The steps from a conditional title to an absolute title were: first was the Knight's fee, which was Knight service in war, called Escuage (Escutcheon—a shield bearing a coat of arms), service of the Shield; second, "free and common socage", a definite fee in lieu of military service; and third fee simple, or absolute, the largest estate a man can have. There was another fee in Virginia known as fee-tail, limited to certain heirs. Jefferson was instrumental in abolishing this title. He cut off the serpent's tail—the tail dropped from the tadpole. Tail in "fee-tail" doesn't mean the lower vertebrae, but is derived from a French word meaning to limit, but that is just what happened the tail was cut off and now we have simply fee, or fee simple. Fee-tail was a special title acquired by a special Act of the Legislature, a tail attached. In 1776 there were many of these tails in existence in Virginia when Jefferson applied the legislative ax and cut them all off.

Entail is a verb meaning to cut off, that is, when an estate was entailed it cut off all the heirs except a designated series those whom the property descended from generation to generation for ever, and could not be sold for debts of any kind. The older statutes in Virginia are sprinkled with Acts of the legislature authorizing certain entitled lands to be sold for the benefit of the owner thereof who was as we say "Landpoor."
WITNESSETH; That for and in consideration of the sum of One Hundred Dollars, cash in hand paid to the party of the first part by the party of the second part, receipt whereof is hereby acknowledged, the said party of the first part does hereby grant and convey with general warranty of title unto the party of the second part all that certain parcel of land in the City of Harrisonburg, Va. designated as Lot No. 1 in Block A in "Smith’s Addition to the City of Harrisonburg," a plat of which Addition is of record in the Clerk’s Office of Rockingham County, Virginia, in Deed Book No. — at Page ...., it being the same lot which was conveyed to the said Richard Roe by John Smith by deed bearing date the 23d day of September, 1923, and of record in the said Clerk’s Office in Deed Book No. — at page —. 

Witness the following signature and seal.

Richard Roe. (Seal)

FOUR BATTLES OF GREAT IMPORTANCE

The Revolution did not only result in overthrowing the King but with him went those laws made of despots, for despots and by despots. It is easy to remember the story of George Washington crossing the Delaware in the face of sleet and ice and snow and rain on a Christmas night. But it is not so easy to remember the more quiet battles fought in the halls of the Legislature. A battle for liberty must be followed up with a law of liberty. Moses battled in the wilderness for what? For the Ten Commandments. Washington fought at Trenton for what? For the Declaration of Independence. Those documents were not conceived in a day, the Decalogue and Declaration. There are four battles that every citizen should know about. Jefferson was the general who led the attack on the strongly entrenched forces. He met four most renowned and experienced generals and defeated them in quick succession. He was a Jackson in action. Who were these generals! Old Gen. En Taille, Old Gen. Primo Geniture, Old Gen. Religious Intolerance and Old Gen. Igno Ramus.

What had these old despots been doing that caused Jefferson to draw the legislative sword and dispatch them so savagely?

First: Old Gen. En Taille had been giving property to a selected class of heirs for ever and ever and this property could not be sold for debts.

Second: Old Gen. Primo Geniture came along when a man died and gave all the land to the eldest son, no matter how many other sons and daughters there were in the family.
Third: Old Gen. Religious Intolerance did so many mean things that I hesitate to even attempt to recount them. He was very much in power in Virginia when the Revolution broke.

Fourth: Old Gen. Igno Ramus. This old despot is too well known for me to dwell upon his activities. Jefferson dealt him a powerful blow but he failed to knock him entirely out. From that day he became a bandit and is an ever present danger. I am told, however, that his following is falling off rapidly.

Now you may want to know the kind of weapons that were used against these old despots that were so effective. Here they are:

First: Old En Taille was completely exterminated by the sword of justice.
Second: Instead of primogeniture we have the law of equal distribution.
Third: The statute of Virginia for religious liberty.
Fourth: A system of General Education.

Jefferson said of these four laws in his Autobiography; “I consider four of these bills, passed or reported, as forming a system by which every fibre would be eradicated of ancient or future aristocracy; and a foundation laid for a government truly republican; and all this would be effected without the violation of a single natural right of any one individual citizen.”

Parton in his life of Jefferson says: “It (speaking of the abolition of the entaille, the first above mentioned) was the earliest and quickest of Jefferson’s triumphs, though he did not live long enough to outlast the enmity his victory engendered. Some of the old Tories found it in their hearts to exult that he, who had disappointed so many fathers, lost his only son before it was a month old.”

Jefferson in his Autobiography says:

“On the 12 of October, 1776, I obtained leave to bring in a bill declaring tenants in tail to hold their lands in fee-simple, (as we do now). In the earlier times of the colony, when lands were to be obtained for little or nothing, some provident individuals procured large grants; and, desirous of founding great families for themselves, settled them on their descendants in fee-tail (that is, forevermore). The transmission of this property from generation to generation, in the same name, raised up a distinct set of families, who, being privileged by law in the perpetuation of their
wealth, were thus formed into a Patrician order, distinguished by splendor and luxury of their establishments. From this order, too, the King habitually selected his Counsellors of State; the hope of which distinction devoted the whole corps to the interests and will of the crown. To annul this privilege, and instead of aristocracy of wealth of more harm and danger, than benefit, to society, to make an opening for the aristocracy of virtue and talent, which nature has wisely provided for the direction of the interests of Society, and scattered with equal hand through all its conditions, was deemed essential to a well-ordered republic. To effect it, no violence was necessary, no deprivation of natural right, but rather an enlargement of it by a repeal of the law. For this would authorize the parent to divide the property among his children equally, as his affections were divided; and would place them, by natural generation on the level of their fellow citizens.” He continues and says that he succeeded only by a few votes. The words in parenthesis are my own. Thus we see what a battle Jefferson had against Old Gen. En Taille and the old Tenth Legion stood back of Jefferson like a stone wall in all his battles for freedom. I have spoken of the Tenth Legion. It was composed of Rockingham and Shenandoah (including Page). What this old world needs is a Jefferson to lead them out of the wilderness.

TITHES ABOLISHED

There is another battle of no little importance which I wish to mention. It is the battle of the Tithes. Prior to 1776 all citizens were taxed one tenth of their income which was paid over to the established church regardless of the church the tax payer belonged to. Patrick Henry won his first laurels defending those who refused to pay these tithes.

In 1776, the first year of the Commonwealth of Virginia, an Act was passed abolishing the tithes so far as dissenters were concerned. The preamble is as follows: “An Act for exempting the different Societies of Dissenters from contributing to the support and maintenance of the Church as by law established, and its ministers and for other purposes therein mentioned.”

The first paragraph of this Act recites that Acts of Parliament which render criminal religious opinions and forbearing to repair to church etc. are abolished.

The second paragraph relieves all dissenters from levies for the support of the established church.
The third paragraph makes an exception so far as arrears are concerned and provides for the poor.

The fourth paragraph saves the Glebe lands for the church.

The fifth paragraph provides that the tithables are to be taken as before and recites that some counties had not made a complete list of tithables. Carriages are to be given in subject to the tax. One reason the tithables were continued to be taken was on account of the fact that all male laboring persons above 16 years of age were required to work on the road. Then too all free male persons between the ages of 18 and 45 were to be enrolled in military companies.

In 1787 a tax bill was passed which abolished the poll tax on each free male person of ten shillings and the tax on slaves under 16 years but a tax of ten shillings was placed on all slaves over 12 years.

All male laboring persons of the age of 16 years or more, except such as are masters of two or more laboring slaves of 16 years or more, were required to work on some road. They were appointed by the Court and were required to work when ordered by the overseer and a penalty of seven shillings and 6 pence for every day's failure so to do was assessed. (Henings Statutes 1785, p. 176.)

In this same year (p. 10) the military Act required all free male persons between the ages of 18 and 45 to enroll in a military company, except Judges, ministers etc. A private muster was to be held once in two months, a regimental muster once a year in March or April, and a general muster of the entire County once a year in October or November. Major General Baron Steuben's plan of military discipline was adopted as was adopted by Congress in 1779. Steuben was one of the aides-de-camp of Frederick the Great.

So we see why the tithables were required to be taken even tho they were abolished as to dissenters so far as they applied to paying church tithes.

In 1776 the taxes were as follows:

40 shillings on a coach or charriot or four wheeled vehicle (wagons and carts excepted.)

20 Shillings on a chair or a two wheeled vehicle.

5 shillings on every tithable person.

5 shillings on every 100 acre.

20 Shillings on marriage.
Gabriel Jones of Bogota, Rockingham County, the King’s Attorney, (Commonwealth’s Attorney now) one of the first lawyers in the Shenandoah Valley had probably the greatest number of slaves in Rockingham County. When he died in 1822 his inventory shows that he had 53 slaves. He also had a great quantity of valuable books as shown by his inventory. The road from his home on the Shenandoah River was known, and still is, as Lawyer’s Road. This home was on the Stover patent.

TAX BOOKS OF ROCKINGHAM CO.

To indicate the nature of these old original entry books, I here give an exact copy of several of the items therein contained. The commissioner for the East District of the county did not make his lists quite as definite and complete as did the commissioner for the West District.

1792 (day of month is also stated when list was received from individual.)

EAST DISTRICT—1792

“Philip Rodes one tythe above 21 years & too horse beasts.”
“John Harrisson, Clr. levies & one slave above 16 years & four horse beasts.”
“John Reeves one tythe above 21 years & John Reeves, Jun. Dt. & William Reeves above 16 years & eleven horse beasts.”
“Everet Windle one tythe above 21 years & one slave above 12 years & five horse beasts.”
“Ludwick Sircle one tythe above 21 years & Michael Erritt & Philip Airy above 16 years & too slaves above 16 years & seven horse beasts.”
“Frederick Hoof one tythe above 21 years.”

FOR THE WEST DISTRICT—1792

“John Hayet ab. 21 and 3 H of Horses.”
“John Smith Jobber ab. 21 & one horse.”
“John Smith ab. 21 and 5 slaves ab. 16 names Ben, Bob, London, Nan and Luce and one ab. 12 names Doll and 6 H of Horses.”
“Thomas McDowel ab. 21 and one son ab. 16 names John and 4 H of Horses.”
“John Rice ab. 21 & 5 slaves ab. 16 named Bob, Rodger, Tobe, Ben and David and 4 slaves ab. 12 named George, Simon, Nan and Frank and 6 H of Horses.”
“James Ralston ab. 21 and 4 sons ab. 16 named Robt., John, Benjamin and William and 8 Horses.”

“Robert McGuffin ab. 21 and 2 apprentices ab. 16 named William Steel and Sterman Tate & 5 Horses.”

“Peter a free Negro and one horse.”

“Phillis a free Negro and one slave named Aaron.”

MARRIAGE

From time immemorial marriage has been attended with ceremonies usually, I should say, of a religious significance. You have heard that our cave-man ancestor took a club, went out into the woods, waylaid his bride, dragged her into his cave and this constituted the ceremony. I do not believe this. Whoever hatched up this idea is unacquainted with animal life. There is no male animal or bird that I know of that uses violence toward the female. He woos most tenderly. He may be rough at other times but never when wooing. The cave man was never below an animal. Of course there may have been cases of wifenapping. But we have them now. These are exceptions that prove the rule.

Later the laws of England and other countries did not require any particular ceremony. We have all read of Gretna Green, Scotland, the place of fugitive love marriages from England. All that these runaway couples had to do was to go to Gretna Green and declare themselves man and wife before witnesses. This was an irregular marriage but lawful. It became known as a common law marriage. So far as I know the Bible requires no ceremony. But by and by the State was asked to settle property rights of children, of widows, of widowers and the custody of children and decree divorces. For obvious reasons, therefore, it became necessary for the State to declare what constituted a lawful marriage. So in law marriage is a contract between three parties; the bride, the groom, the State. The State gives consent by issuing license and appoints an agent to conclude the contract, who is usually a minister of some church, in this country, but in some states a civil magistrate may also conclude the relation. In Louisiana a magistrate can perform this ceremony. When a minister performs a ceremony according to his church, he represents the State and the church, but all that the state desires him to do is to unite the parties and make return thereof to the Clerk’s office, according to the statute, no particular form of ceremony being required.
Of course true marriage is more than a contract; it is this and much more. It is a bond of love for life. You could do away with all ceremonies, all formalities, all contracts, all State restrictions and still there would be true love bargains. The majority of the youths would find mates and marriage would result which would last thru life. But there would be a minority that for lack of something would be marrying and divorcing every day. This small minority of wolves would endanger the sheep. Hence it is necessary for all to comply with the law that these wolves might be held in check. We all by necessity must do many things because of the existence of this wolf minority. Ninety per cent of the people never feel the existence of the criminal law. They live above that law.

In England about 1750 it was provided that no marriage should be valid unless solemnized in a church after publication of banns or by special license. I understand that a civil magistrate in England can perform the ceremony now. In some countries two ceremonies are performed, one to satisfy the state and one to satisfy the church. In Virginia the minister represents both.

MARRIAGE IN VIRGINIA

14 Chas. II, 1661-2. This Act of the Virginia legislature provided that license issue by the Governor and that marriage should be by license or thrice publication of banns and should be celebrated according to the laws of England. The note to this Act states that the marriage should be celebrated only by the Church of England.* In the same year another Act required a bond, "THAT THERE IS NO LAWFUL CAUSE TO OBSTRUCT THEIR MARRIAGE," be given payable to the souvereign lord the king for the sum of fifty pounds, and that the Clerks of the Courts should issue license.

Prior to this date all marriages were by the publication of banns, that is, the minister would publish the intended marriage by thrice posting notices, usually on the front door of the church, I presume, notifying all persons that unless legal objection be made he would unite certain named persons in marriage on a certain day.

* It has been said that Muhlenberg, the Lutheran who ordered the drum to beat at the church door, identified himself with the Episcopal church in order that he might marry couples.
Now there were no ministers in some of the frontier counties and few in others and hence there was no one to publish banns. Therefore, it was provided that if the groom should give a conditional bond that there was no legal objection, the publication of banns could be dispensed with. So the bond was in lieu of the banns. The groom could take his license and bride and find a minister and be married. In some of the frontier counties persons other than ministers were appointed to perform marriage ceremonies.

In 1705, the bond was continued payable to "Our sovereign lady the Queen." The fees allowed were as follows:

To the governor for license 20 shillings or 200 pounds of tobacco.
To the clerk for license 5 shillings or 200 pounds of tobacco.
To the minister of license 20 shillings or 200 pounds of tobacco.
To the minister by banns 5 shillings or 50 pounds of tobacco.
To the minister or reader for publishing and certifying banns 1 shilling and 6 pence or 15 pounds of tobacco.

In 1796 clandestine marriages were prevented.

In the Code of 1819 the bonds and banns were continued. Here we find a provision for the appointment of other persons than ministers to perform the marriage ceremony. (Va. Code 1819 p. 398, Vol. I.)

Banns were abolished on March 18, 1848, and at the same time divorce by the legislature was repealed and placed in the jurisdiction of the Circuit Courts. (Henings 1848, p. 65.)

In 1780 there was a tax of ten pounds placed on marriage. The marriage Act in the Code of 1848 does not require a marriage bond altho it seems that marriage bonds were filed in the clerk's office of Rockingham County until 1854.

In 1780 it was provided that four dissenting ministers of each sect in each county were allowed to perform the marriage ceremony. Former marriages by dissenting ministers were validated. All marriages were to be by thrice publication of Banns or by license, except Quakers and Mennonites who were permitted to marry by their custom, but the clerk of the meeting was required to make return of the same to the clerk of the court. Their marriages were very simple, I understand, the bride and groom announcing publicly in the meeting that from henceforth they would be man and wife. In the eyes of God this was as good as a ceremony in Buckingham Palace and if the results of marriage
have any bearing on the subject, as I believe they do, these simple marriages were more blessed by God than those more elaborate ones.

In 1696 ministers were given a yearly salary of 16,000 pounds of tobacco. This was the first Act allowing ministers 16,000 pounds of tobacco and it remained so until the Revolution. Clerks of the registers were required to keep a record of the births, marriages and deaths. (1696, p. 152-Henings.)

A minister was to have 40 shillings for preaching a funeral sermon in 1748. I have noticed that in Augusta County several gallons of liquor were required to bury a person. It may have been the custom in other counties also.

A MARRIAGE BOND

Know all men by these presents, that we, Henry Shaver and Christian Coffman, are held and firmly bound unto His Excellency James Barbour, Esquire, Governor of Virginia, and his successors for the use of the Commonwealth, in the sum of One Hundred and Fifty Dollars to which payment well and truly to be made, we bind ourselves our heirs, executors and administrators jointly and severally firmly by these presents. Sealed and dated this 5th day of February 1812 in the 26th year of the Commonwealth.

The condition of the above obligation is such that whereas a marriage is shortly intended to be solemnized between the above bound Henry Shaver and Susannah Strickler daughter of John Strickler, dec'd. whose guardian is Henry Brumbaek of Rockingham County, if therefore, there shall be no lawful cause to obstruct the said marriage, then the above obligation to be void; otherwise, to remain in full force and virtue.

Henry Shaver (SEAL)
Christian Coffman (SEAL)

Signed, Sealed and Delivered
in the presence of H. J. Gambill,

Here is the Clerk's Certificate

Rockingham County, To-wit:

Whereas there is marriage shortly (sometimes suddenly) intended to be had and solemnized between Jacob Boyers and Margaret Huffman, daughter of Nicholas Huffman, dec'd. late of this County, I do certify that the said Bowers hath with his security
entered into and acknowledged their bond according to law. Given under my hand this 3d of Aug. 1787.

J. Ervin, D. C.

To Anthony Rader, Gent., first Justice in the Commission of the Peace for said County or in his absence to the next sworn in said Commission.

This certificate is labelled on the outside “Jacob Boyers marriage license.”

Whether this paper when signed by the justice became the license itself I am not able to say. This label would indicate this. The justice was authorized to “sign the certificate and direct the same.”

If either party was under twenty-one the consent of the parent or guardian was required to be given in person or in writing with two witnesses. Here is John Strickler’s consent. It was in 1785.

“Rockingham County
Sir: I desire you will grant a marriage licenses for Malekiah Berry, Jun. and my daughter Barbary Strickler of the sd. County and in so doing you will oblige your humble servant.

John Strickler.

Teste:
Malekiah Berry
Boston Pinton.
Mr. Henry Ewens Clerk of Rockm. County.”

Several of these old notes address the “Worshipful Clerk of Rocktown”. The affidavits are sometimes made upon “The Holy Evangelists” instead of upon the Holy Bible.

Consent of Henry Brumbach, guardian of Susan Strickler, who is about to marry Henry Shaver.

Know all men by these presence that I Henry Brumbach of Shenandoah County and State of Virginia, as guardian of Susan Strickler, daughter of John Strickler of the aforesaid County, dec’d., do agree consent and authorize Henry Shaver of Rockingham County and State aforesaid to all the right titles and claims which the aforesaid guardian was authorized by law do consent that the aforesaid Henry Shaver and aforesaid Susan Strickler

*John came very near consenting to a mirage. Let us hope that Malekiah and Barbary did not find it to be a delusion, altho that would be a fitting appellation today.
shall without any other demands be given in lawful matrimony at any time after delivering of these presence where the said guardian here unto set his hand and seal this 1 day of February, 1812.

In the presence of
Christian Coffman."

On the back of this note is an old account written in German.

On Aug. 6, 1814, Ephraim Salvage, with Samuel Kaufman as surety, enters into a similar bond to marry Frances Strickler, daughter of John Strickler, dec'd. Samuel Kaufman is her guardian.

NAMES

The origin of names is an interesting study. Prior to the 10th century there were no family names. Of course a person in that day was further identified, no doubt, by adding something to his name, for instance, as John son of David, or John the miller, and so on. The custom then was similar to that, so far as names are concerned, of Biblical times—Abraham, Isaac and Jacob—we never hear of any family name. Of course later further identification became a necessity and we have David the son of Jesse who was further identified by David of the tribe of Juda. So these tribes became family names just as clans in other sections of the world. *

Family names had their origin in many sources but some of the most common sources were: place names, names of occupation, and names derived from personal appearance or characteristics. Anciently the home often had an emblem or picture above the door. For instance if that picture was a bear the family became known as Bear. If a man lived on a hill he became known as John Hill; if a man was a carpenter he became known as John Carpenter; if he had a red head he became known as John Red (in German Hans Roth). The famous Rothschild family took its name from the red schutcheon (red shield or in German, rothschild) that hung over the door. The family name originally was Bauer, the founder of the famous banking house being Mayer A. Bauer.

Then many took their names from simply adding son to the father’s name, thus we have Johnson, Williamson. Mack in Scot-

* Among Indians the mother gave the family or clan name.
land means son and here we see the origin of the multitude of Macks.

The Indians had a similar method of identification. I heard of an Indian in Arizona who was called “Apache Yuma Dick”, presumably Dick claimed to be of the Yuma tribe which was a member of the larger nation of Apache Indians; as we might identify an American by the name “United States Virginia Dick” or as a son of Israel might say “Israel Juda David.”

The meaning of the names of some of the early settlers at Massanutten and in Page County generally might be interesting. I here give a few of the names with their meanings.

Jager—hunter
*Kufer, Kufner—cooper
*Kuster—sexton
Maurer—mason
Leineweber—linen—weaver
Mueller—miller
*Sauter, Suter—shoemaker
*Schaaffner—Shaver—steward
Schenck—cup—bearer
Scherer—barber
Schmidt—smith
Schneider—tailor
Schreiber—writer
*Schnitz, Sheets—shooter, archer
Schultz—mayor
*Siegrist—sexton
Spengler—tin—smith
Wagner—wagoner
*Wannemaker—basket-maker
Weber—weaver
Ziegler—brickmaker
Zimmerman—carpenter
Bach—brook
Bacher—Bachman—one who lives near a brook
*Bernier—from Bern, Switz.
*Boehm, Beam—Bohemian
Rosenberger—mountain rose
*Brubacher—a village in Switz.

*Fahrni—village in Bern
*Halden—village
*Haldeman—village man
*Imboden—bottom lands
*Schwab—Swope—a swabian
*Urner—Canton Uri
Bar—bear
Baum—tree
Bieber—beaver
Engel—angel
Faust—fist
Fuchs—fox
Haas—hare
Hahn—rooster
Helm—helmet
Konig—king
Vogel, Fogel—bird
Gut—good
Hoch—tall—high
Jung—young
Kalb, Kulp, Culp—calf
Kahl—bald
Klein, Cline—small
Kleindienst—small service
Lang—long
Roth—red
Rothaermel—red sleeve
Swartz—black
Weiss—white

*Those marked with “*” are from Kuhns German and Swiss Elements, etc. I recommend this book to those interested in the subject. A copy may be obtained by addressing the Wesleyan Library, Middletown, Conn.
Tschudi—judge in Switz. Judy
Theiss—Mathias shortened
Conrad, Kunrat—strong in
Council
Arnald—rules as an eagle—
Arnold
Bernhard—Strong as a bear
Dietrick—ruler of people
Eberhart—strong as a boar
Eckert—strong sword
Garman, Jarman—spearman
Gebhard—generous giver—Kept
Grove (Graf or Graff)—Count
Graaf, Groff, Groft
Kaufman—Coffman—Merchant
Roads (Roth)—Red
Rothgeb—Redgift
Strickler—knitter—Stricknoodle
means a knitting needle. Sidenstricker—silkknitter
Stone (Stein)—Stone, a mug
made of stone
Bumgardner (Baumgardner)—
orchardist—treegarden
Stoneberger (Stein)—mountain
stone
Stoneburger (Stein)—village
stone
Kiser—Kaiser—Caesar—Emperor
Albright—Albrecht—of distin-
guished race
Hartman—strong
Irmintraut—Armentrout—Ehr-
mantrout—friend of the Walky-
rie Thrudr.
Reinhard—strong in Council
Trautman—follower of the
Walkyrie Thrudr
Trout—Trautman with the man
left off
Kuhn, Kuhs, Coons, Koontz—
Kunrat—Conrad
Kundig from Gundobert
Seits from Siegfried
Gottschalk—servant of God
Gerhard—strong spear
Heidrick—of noble rank
Hildebrandt—battle—sword
Hite—Heid—forest
Rothrock—redrock
Ritter—knight
Henkel—chicken
Zirkle, Sirkle—circle—compasses
Frict—village in Aargau
Biedefish, Peterfish—noblefish
Biedler—noble
Kurtz—short
Yost, Just—Justus
Becker—Baker
Brenneisen—Blacksmith
Brunner—well-digger
Garber, Gerber, Garver—tanner,
Currier
Huber, Hoover—small farmer,
one who has a hube
Heilman—doctor
Sheeligh, Shelley
Cole, Kohl
Frailey, Frohlich—cheerful
Yerkes, Jorg, Jorges, George,
Yerrick
Beyer—a Bavarian
Brumback, Brumbaugh—one who
dwells by a rumbling brook
Baugher, Bacher—a brook-dwel-
ler
Harbaugh, Herbach—Mr. Brook
Berger, Barger—a mountain
dweller
Muench, Minich, Minich—
Oehrle, Early
Bauman—Bowman—builder
Brumfield—Brumfeld—a buzzing
field
Funk—spark, sparkle
Funkhouser—Funkhnuser—spark-
ling-house
Gross—tall, great
Hochman—tallman, highman
Haar—harr—hair
Herr—master
BIG SPRING MEETING HOUSE

This meeting house is located about seven miles north of Luray on the main road leading north-east through Page County. The present house is not so old. It is the second house on this location. The first meeting house was several hundred yards down the branch at a very large spring. The site of the old house can still be seen near the big spring. A little further down the stream are other springs. The water fairly boils out of the ground and it is known as boiling spring. All these springs produce nearly as much water as flows down the famous Hawksbill, easily enough to run a mill if carried down to the mouth of the stream at the river.

Spring Farm, located on the Lee Highway about a mile east of Luray, was patented by the orphans of Martin Kaufman, the Mennonite minister who died in 1749, and Henry Brumback married one of the orphans and hence obtained possession of Spring Farm. He is the ancestor of all the Brumbacks in Page Co. and has many descendants in the west. He built the magnificent brick residence that stands on the rising ground just north of the spring. It has a double porch on each side. The spring is one of the largest in the country. In the name Brumback we see two words, brumm meaning to bubble, buzz, or grumble, bach meaning brook; therefore, the name Brumback originally meant one who dwelt by a rumbling brook. Here we see the name Brumback was not only appropriate for the family in Europe but was also appropriate for the name in America.

Of course the reader will understand that the names often go through such a variation of spelling that the origin is mere guess work. But many names can definitely be traced to their certain origin.

I have indicated the variation in many of the names and in some instances I did not even guess the meaning.
about a mile away. On every hand here one sees power going to waste. The village of Springfield is located on Pass run just above its junction with the Hawksbill. It is appropriately named as it is in a field of springs. The Big Spring church has been located at its present site probably for 80 years. Mr. R. T. Strickler who is 78 years old (1924) tells me that it has been there ever since he can remember. He thinks the old log church down by the Big Spring was torn down and brought up to the present site and used until the present church was built. The church has not been used for several years. There is another Baptist church at Big Spring and a school house.

Early Baptist churches in Page County were: Big Spring, Mill Creek, Hawksbill, Mundellsville and probably others. The mother church or congregation was called Mill Creek. This was also the name of the local church at Hamburg on Mill Creek.

**MILL CREEK CHURCH**

Mr. J. A. Brubaker has several old deeds to land surrounding Mill Creek Meeting House.

Rudolph Mag (Mauck) conveyed 400 acres to Christian Maggot in 1754. Witnesses; Samuel Newman, Richard Holsenbeck and David Barsan. This tract, I am told, lies along the eastern side of the Lee Highway near Hamburg and adjoins J. A. Brubaker on the northeast. It is now owned (1924) by M. V. Gander, Daniel Hite and Noah Rothgeb.

In 1786 John Koontz and Elizabeth, his wife, conveyed to Daniel Mawk a tract of land west of the Lee Highway at Hamburg it being a part of a tract of 270 acres conveyed to Koontz by David Kaufman. It is possible that the church lot was situated on this land.

In 1811 Joseph Mauk, one of the sons and devisees of Daniel Mauk, conveys two tracts of land to John Brubaker. This conveyance includes the above Koontz tract. The deed excepts the Mill Creek church lot in these words:

"Excepting and reserving one acre and twelve square perches of the said tract of land as the same was laid off, and a meeting house built thereon by the neighbors for religious purposes, commonly called and known by the name of Mauks Meeting House."

* See ante p. 41. In an article appearing in the Page News, October 1924, it is stated that Big Spring dates from December 11, 1824, but here we have positive proof that Big Spring was in existence in 1798. It was probably much older.
It is not clear whether Daniel Mauk gave the lot or John Koontz.

I have not been able to determine definitely when the old meeting house on Mill Creek at Hamburg was built but I have evidence that there was a meeting house there as early as 1798. Mr. J. A. Brubaker, the present Clerk (1924) of the Mill Creek Church (Old Baptist), Ebenezer Association, has minutes dating from 1798. From a perusal of these minutes I conclude that the designation Mill Creek was probably the name for two bodies, for a larger church organization that covered a great part of Page County and afterwards for a smaller organization or local church on Mill Creek. Each had several Meeting houses. The local church had at least two meeting houses, one at Hamburg on Mill Creek, the mother church, and a meeting house on the Hawksbill, three miles below Marksville near Mr. Lester Biedler’s residence. The larger Mill Creek church had at least two meeting houses, one at Mill Creek and one at Big Spring seven miles north of Luray and possibly a third at Mundellsville, just above Luray.

The oldest minute book begins August 18, 1798. These were not the first minutes recorded in this book evidently as there is evidence of at least a dozen leaves being torn out. There is a part of an old fly-leaf in the book but not attached thereto altho originally, no doubt, it was a part of the book, with this inscription “Mill Creek Church, March 1798.”

The earliest minutes begin thus; “Church of Christ Mill Creek.” On July 20, 1799, the designation “Baptist” is used for the first time, the minutes beginning; “The Baptist Church of Christ at Mill Creek. Church meeting held at Big Spring.” This, I believe, is the only time that the designation “Baptist” is used in the early minutes.

Prior to April 16, 1803, the meetings were often held at the homes of some of the brethren. I find them meeting at the homes of the following persons between the years of 1798 and 1803; Absolam Hurst, James Odell, John Wood, Daniel Mock and Bungaman. The Hurst home was used more frequently. I am of the opinion that these homes were all within the vicinity of Hamburg on Mill Creek. Daniel Mock’s home was there and the meeting house was located on his land. It is quite likely that they met at the respective homes even after the meeting house was built.

This is a copy of the usual minutes recorded:
"Church of Christ-Mill Creek, Church meeting held at Bro. Absolam Hursts on 16th Day of March 1799 after Divine Service Proseed. to business." (If there was any business it was recorded.)
Jno. Coonts, Modr.
Jesse Wood, Clerk."

These were monthly meetings at which time there was usually some business to be transacted. Very frequently some member was cited to appear and show cause why he did not attend church or on some other breach of decorum. One or two brethren were usually directed to deliver the citation. The earliest meetings seem to have alternated between Big Spring and Mill Creek but from about the year 1802 they were all held at Big Spring. The minutes began thus: "Church of Christ-Mill Creek held at Big Spring", etc.

One meeting was held at the Mill Creek meeting house in 1798 then on January 16, 1802, a meeting was held at the Mill Creek meeting house.

From 1802 to 1809 the business meetings were held at Big Spring, with few exceptions. On January 16, 1909, this order is entered:

"By the request of the members living about Mill Creek Meeting House we agree to give them the full privilege to act in a Church capacity as we have been at the Big Spring."

Jesse Wood, Clerk."

This I assume was the beginning of the local organization called Mill Creek. Prior to this it had been a member of the larger organization known as Mill Creek.

On May 19, 1911, it was recorded that the "Polemmes (?) Society" was not a proper society for Christians to join.

This minute book covers a period from August 18, 1798, to February 7, 1824. John Coonts is moderator thru the entire period. Jesse Wood is clerk until November 16, 1822, when Benjamin Wood appears as clerk to the end of the book in 1824. A dozen or more leaves are torn out of the back of the book.

Persons mentioned in the minutes and other churches etc. are:
John Coonts, moderator.
Jesse Wood, clerk.
Jesse Wood and Jno. Coonts, delegates to Crooked Run, Asso. Culpeper. Absolam Hurst, meeting at his home.
Nehemiah Wood.
James Odell, meeting at his home.
Members from Martin Kaufman's church allowed to join. Kaufman lived on the left bank of the river a few hundred yards above the White House where Mr. J. A. Brubaker now lives, the old house was, I am told, on the site of the present dwelling. Kaufman probably held his meetings in the White House. I understand his brother lived here.
Every member should give according to his conscience.
Rachel Coalman.
Jacob Coalman cited for having a dance in his home.
Ebenezer Leeth.
John Allen.
To. Bungaman.
Kissiah Hammon, letter from church in Wythe Co. concerning.
Richard Powell.
Enoch Job.
John Skeleton.
Samuel Jurdin.
Abraham Pence and wife join, March 13, 1802.
Sister Bungaman.
Happy Creek Church, Frederick Co. mentioned in connection with Wm. Walker and wife.
Henry Pence.
It is the opinion that the female members should visit the men in meeting sometimes.
Samuel Levesque.
Geo. Britton from Broad Run Church, Rece. by letter. 1803.
John Coonts received a letter from Sevier County, Kentucky, concerning one Geo. Hurst, excluded 16 or 17 years ago from Mill Creek church, April 16, 1803. Here is evidence that the church was in existence prior to 1786.
Sinnet Atwood, 1806.
Elizabeth McCarty.
Sally Nun.
T. Henden, Given full liberty to preach and exercise his gift.
Barbara Beary.
Elizabeth Wood.
Nancy Walker.
Samuel Skeleton & Isaac Skeleton, received by experience, 1807.
Sarah Chambers rec. without letter, her house having burned and letter destroyed.
Black woman, Letty, rec. & Baptized.*
Daniel Kite rec. from Martin Kaufman's church, 1807.
Geo. Coonts given a letter.
Jan. 16, 1809, local Mill Creek Church given privilege to act in Church capacity.
Sister Walker rec. from Happy Creek church.
Bro. Carter cited.
Catlett Lampton cited.
Bro. Modisty invited to a seat.
Joshua Lampton.
Messengers, Jn. Coonts, Jno. Wood, Isaac Hershberger and Jesse Wood to F. T. (or R) meeting house in Culpeper Co. 1809.
Marlan, black man, given a letter
Dinah Wood
Henry Pence
Sister Horner
Robert Carter of Broad Run rec.
Association at Fiery Run Culpeper, 1810.
Wm. Atwood — Jno. Lampton
Wm. Adams allowed to teach school in Big Spring meeting house until another can be built.
Sopha Mc Kay
Polemmes Society not a fit order for Christians to join. I do not know what society this is
Coonts, Jesses & Jno. Wood and I. Strickler messengers, 1811.
Mill Creek shall not have a meeting every other month.
Rose Robertson rec.
Abraham — Elizabeth Pence, given letter.
Isaac — John Koontz and Mary Grimsley received and baptized at the Hawksbill meeting house on June 9, 1811. This is the first notice of the Hawksbill meeting house. Also Susan Decker and Elizabeth Aleshite.

*I am told that the galleries in the old church were reserved for the colored members.
Sarah Homer (Horner) rec.
Bro. Modesitt given liberty to preach.
Christian Bungarner rec. from Kaufman’s church.
Isaac Strickler raises a question.

\textit{Mill Creek Minute Book. (The Local Church) From March 15, 1809}

This book begins on March 15, 1809. It will be recalled that Mill Creek Church was given the privilege to act as a Church on January 16, 1809, by the Mill Creek Church sitting at Big Spring.

On the first page recorded the Rules of Decorum of the Church adopted on January 8, 1825, the committee submitting the report being; Edward Jeffries, Robert Garnett, David Warner (Varner) and Robert Mauck.

Then follows several pages of the names of persons received by baptism, removed by death, etc.

From the list I learn that Eld. John Koontz died 1831. The first list here recorded is of date 1823. John Coonts served as moderator at Big Spring as well as at Mill Creek. Both minute books show this. I have been told that in his older days he was blind. On Saturday March 13, 1824, Eld. John Koontz resigned as pastor of the Church in consequence of extreme age and infirmities and requested that another pastor be chosen. He served as moderator and preached after that date according to the minutes. I understand that he was nearly a hundred years old.

The first minutes were recorded as follows:

“At a church meeting held at Mill Creek meeting house March 15, 1809, after divine service proceeded to business.

1st. Brother Isaas Strickler chosen Clerk of this meeting house.

2nd. Elder John Koontz chosen moderator.

And having obtained liberty from the Mill Creek Church to keep a book and do our own business in future it is agreed that we shall be named a branch of Mill Creek Church.

Adjourned until meeting of course at this place.

Jno. Koontz, Moderator.
Isac Strickler, Clerk.”

These minutes are well written in a legible hand. Here we have the authority for the belief that there were two organizations by the name of Mill Creek, and that the Mill Creek Church at
THE STRICKLER BIBLE

"The Ark of the Covenant" with a Swiss Guard on Either Side

This ancient book was published by Christoffel Froschouer at Zurich, Switzerland, in 1536, was brought across the waters by Abraham Strickler, one of the first settlers at Massanutten and has remained in the family ever since. It is now in the possession of Mr. and Mrs. S. H. Modisett, Mrs. Modisett's mother being a Miss Strickler. They are both descendants of the Stricklers. Mr. Modisett is also a descendant of Joist Hite. The stone jars were brought across the ocean at the same time and have remained with the Bible. The tallest jar is 13 inches high.

Hamburg was a branch Church of the older and larger body which took in the Big Spring meeting house.

June 17, 1809—Meeting at Mill Creek meeting house.
September 16, 1809—Meeting. Briant Moody given letter, Abraham Hershberger and Katharine, his wife received from Kaufman's Church.
December 16, 1809—Meeting. Bros. Pence, Rhodes and Kerns cited. March 17, 1810—Meeting. On motion it was agreed a subscription should be drawn and money collected for the support of the Gospel at this place and that we should hereafter discharge our duty here and not at the Big Spring.
June 15, 1810—James Modisett from Water Lick Ch. rec.
September 15, 1810—Joseph Bottz rec.
March 16, 1811—Met at Bungaman's to rec. Sister Bungaman. Easter Monday.
June 15, 1811—Isaac Strickler moved that the yard be fenced. Carried—Isaac Skelton app. to execute order. Abraham Spitzer and James Modicett app. to apply to the Big Spring Church for the privilege of meeting every other month.

* Business meetings were held four times a year until December 11, 1811, after which time monthly meetings were recorded, alternating between Mill Creek and the Hawksbill Meeting House. They were usually held on Saturday. They are fairly complete. I give only excerpts from a few.
(This explains the order at Big Spring recorded in the other minute book refusing meeting at Mill Creek every other month. It also indicates that the meeting there under the name Mill Creek is of a higher authority.)

Elizabeth Kaufman rec.

November 9, 1911—A motion was made and passed to meet at the Hawkshbill Meeting House every other month.

December 11, 1911—Meeting at Hawkshbill Meeting House. (Big Spring minutes carry a memo, as of May, 1811 and in June, of business transacted at the Hawkshbill meeting house several persons were baptised. I suppose that Mill Creek must have superseded Big Spring at this place.)

January 11, 1812—Mill Creek meeting.

February 8, 1812—Hawkshbill meeting. A. C. Booton found no grievance.

Widow Almond, Mary W. Night & W. L. Marye rec.

March 7, 1812—Mill Creek meeting.

Lester Marye, rec.

April 11, 1812—Hawkshbill Meeting.

"The Mill Creek Church met at the Hawkshbill meeting house in a church capacity and after praise and prayer Bro. Koontz delivered an exhortation. The church then proceeded to business as follows. An inquiry made for grievances and none found, a door was opened for experience. Edward and Mann Almond, Mrs. Cave and Samuel Hershberger related their experience and were received for Baptism. A motion was made for baptising at Mundellsville on the 2nd. Lord's Day in May next, and concluded so to be. Adjourned." *

(The door was opened at nearly all the meetings.)


August 8, 1812—Hannah Strickler cited by A. Spitler. Petition by W. L. Marye to Big Spring, ordered to be sent by messengers, J. Rhodes, Sr. Jno. Basye & Daniel Beaver.

October 10, 1812—On a motion being made concerning the constitution of the branch of the said Mill Run Church, it is concluded to meet at the chapel near Mundellsville on Wednesday after the fourth Lord's Day in the present month at which time and place the members of said Mill Creek Church are requested to meet. Mundellsville was just above Luray on the Hawkshbill.

April 10, 1813—Hawkshill. Daniel Strickler chosen clerk.

May 8, 1813—Samuel Hershberger by letter from the new constituted Church. Christina Alshite from Kaufman's church. (A new church was evidently constituted at Mundellsville).


* Mundellsville is probably the correct spelling.
THE STRICKLER BIBLE

The size of the original is twice that of the above etching. The date, M. D. XXXVI, is very plain. It is a beautiful engraving, in black and white with the exception that the heavy black borders of the etching are in red and the solid black of the cloak of the figure representing Deity is also in red. The twelve pictures represent twelve scenes in creation as recorded in Genesis. Beginning in the upper left hand corner the first picture represents the opening lines in Genesis: "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth." Just below it is the twelfth picture representing Adam delving and Eve spinning while little Cain lies near by. There are many small engravings throughout the book.

July 10-13—Mill Creek. Wm. Hollensworth & Edney Basye rec.
August 7, 1813—Hawksbill. David Mussleman received from Hawksbill
meeting house by letter. (This would indicate that there was a Hawkshill independent church besides the Hawkshill a member of Mill Creek, if my notes are correct.)

September 11, 1813—Daniel Strickler and Samuel Hershberger app. Deacons for upper part of Mill Creek Church. Isaac Strickler moves that the door for experience be opened before business convenes & immediately after divine service.

October 9, 1813—A. C. Booton was invited to a seat.

November 13, 1813—Masa Lowack rec. Baptizing at Daniel Strickler’s Thursday next, a letter ordered for Mary Grove.

December 11, 1813—Susan Musselman rec.

June 11, 1814—Hawkshill. David Varner and his wife received. "Then we sat a little while together in brotherly love and harmony and adjourned." (This was frequently the only minutes recorded.)

June 10, 1815—David Hite and Susan his wife, Christian Grove, Jno. Koontz, Jno. Varner rec.

August 12, 1815—Katharine Ward rec.

December 7, 1816—Daniel Strickler cited to Big Spring.

November 13, 1817—Mill Creek. Bros. Samuel Hershberger & David Hite paid one-sixth each toward a clerk’s note for recording a deed for the meeting house lot Mary Brumback rec. Joseph Strickler and Hannah, his wife cited.

Saturday, March 11, 1820—Mill Creek. "Bro Samuel Hershberger took the clerk’s note for recording the deed for the meeting house lot for safe keeping."

August 12, 1820—Asso. at Rapid Ann meeting house, Madison Co.

Saturday, March 10, 1821—It was decided to hold monthly meetings at Mill Creek meeting house.

Saturday, March 9, 1822—"The Baptist Church of Christ called the Mill Creek Church." Samuel Hershberger, David Varner & Edward Jeffries app. to procure a constitution for the church in reviv al to the one that has been mislaid and submit it to that body at Big Spring next meeting and to this body at our next meeting at the Hawkshill. (This is the second time that the designation Baptist has been used in either the minutes of Big Spring or at Mill Creek. It is used a number of times at about this date.)

Saturday, April 13, 1822—"The Baptist Church of Christ called Mill Creek at the Hawkshill." It was decided to consider at the next meeting the question of establishing an annual communication with that branch of said church at Big Spring previous to the Association each year.

May 11, 1822—Mill Creek. It was decided to establish an annual communication on important business.

June 7, 1823—Church refuses to join the Baptist General Meeting of Correspondence in Virginia.

Saturday, March 13, 1824—Robert Mauck and Jno. Garnett rec. from Mt. Carmel Church. (This church was in Luray and is still in existence, I understand). Elder John Koontz resigns the pastoral
care of the church. It was decided to meet only at Mill Creek for business meetings and Thomas Blackman was app. to keep the key to the meeting house.

April 10, 1824—Elders Daniel, James and Robert Garnett preached and Robert was elected pastor. He accepted in May.

June 12, 1824—Elder John Koontz preached. Bro. Bumgarner delivered the book and papers from the Big Spring church. The committee app. to make a list of all the members made their report and the list was ordered enrolled in the book. The church again refused to join the General Association of Virginia.

January 5, 1831—Communication from Shiloh and Ketockton Associations read. The minutes of the Ebenezer Association read.

June 11, 1831—Edward Holmes presented letter from South River Church Shenandoah County. (I do not know where this Church was located). This book ends in 1847. John Menifee, Moderator and pastor Joseph Aleshire, Clerk. Joseph T. Strickler was clerk in 1878. There was a division in the church here about 1832 on the subject of missions. Another division occurred about 1880, known as the Burnham division. The Potter and Pence debate occurred about this time. There was a lengthy suit over the Mt. Carmel Baptist Church of Luray over the possession of the church house about 1860. This has been published in book form.

"RECEIVED BY BAPTISM SINCE ASSOCIATION OF 1823":

Benjamin Kaufman
Marshall Yowell
Abraham Spitler
Mary Spitler
Eleanor Jeffries
John Kauffman
Morgan Mauck
Alcey (colored woman)
Wm. M. Crawford
Chloe Crawford
Barbara Job
Lucy Jenkins
Thomas (colored)
Anna Hershberger
Elizabeth Corbin
Samuel Grove
Thomas Cave
Elizabeth Cave
Christian Keyser
Catherine Cave
Samuel Lienberger
Susan Lienberger
Elizabeth Cave

Eli Cave
Eve Bloss
Anna Lienberger
Abraham Lienberger
David Corbin
Thomas Cave
Enoch Jenkins
Aaron (colored)
Polly Varner
Daniel Varner
Barbara Bumgarner
Elizabeth Crawford
Thomas Crawford
Elizabeth Corbin
Barbara Varner
Joel Mauck
Polly Mauck
Anna Keyser
Barbara Yowell
Anna Kaufman
Mary Grove
Susan Grove
Rebecca Grove

Barbara Gochenour
Mary Corbin
Anna Koontz
Peggy Halterman
Henry Halterman
Nancy Stover
Elizabeth Stover
Philip Koontz
Reuben Holmes
George Rothgeb
Anna Rothgeb
Nancy Hert
Wm. Berkholder
Polly Corbin
Martin Grimsley
Gabrill (at Brubakers)
Andrew Keyser
Christian Price
Artimisia Slusher
David Koontz
Elizabeth Koontz
Rebecca Mouk

* From Mill Creek Church Minute Book beginning March 15, 1809.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Date</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Eberbett Brumback</td>
<td>1836</td>
<td>Jesse Grigsby</td>
<td>1840</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phebe Strickler</td>
<td>1828</td>
<td>Abraham Purdom</td>
<td>1843</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm. Grove</td>
<td>1829</td>
<td>Elizabeth Grove</td>
<td>1844</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth Tucker</td>
<td></td>
<td>Mary Ross</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary Rinehart</td>
<td></td>
<td>Geor. Bungaman</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Telpha Price</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susan Price</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daniel Aleshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy Corbin</td>
<td>1830</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth Grove</td>
<td>1831</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eleanot Miller</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daniel Koontz</td>
<td>1827</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth Gains</td>
<td>1828</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joseph Koontz</td>
<td>1829</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1823</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Removed by Death</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm. Judd</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm. Koontz</td>
<td>1835</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth Barnett</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>The above are listed on one page—triple column</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>The second page follows</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot;Excluded&quot;</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jerry (Colored)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hannah Strickler</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy Christie</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm. Christie</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Geo. Aleshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm. Burkholder</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Robt. Stallard (Col.)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Gatewood, Sr.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joseph C. Koontz</td>
<td>1829</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary Hershberger</td>
<td>1830</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philip Countz</td>
<td>1832</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm. Grimsley</td>
<td>1833</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Since 1833</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy Stover</td>
<td></td>
<td>Dec. meeting 1849</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Since 1834</td>
<td></td>
<td>Daniel Stover</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Levieca Anderson (col.)</td>
<td></td>
<td>Susan Aleshire</td>
<td>1829 or 39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nancy Hurt</td>
<td>1835</td>
<td>Conrad Aleshire</td>
<td>1829 or 39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm. Christie</td>
<td>1836</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thomas Cave</td>
<td>1836</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zelpia Price</td>
<td>1837</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Since 1837</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>1839</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joseph C. Koontz</td>
<td>1829</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Andrew Keyser</td>
<td>1830</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizabeth Corben</td>
<td>1841</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Moly Corben</td>
<td>1841</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Since 1833</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Philip Koontz</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christopher Price</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm. Grimsley</td>
<td>1833</td>
<td>Apr. meeting 1848</td>
<td>Joseph Aleshire 1849</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Since 1833</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Daniel Stover 1850</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

From minute book Mill Creek Church beginning 1809
3d. page double column tabulation lists
"Received by Baptism since Association 1832." (Double column)
MASSANUTTEN

John Bixler
Bethany Kendal
Ann Reed Givens
Martha Huffman
Vice Anderson (Col.)
Joseph Aleshire
Sarah Aleshire
James Koontz
Peter (Col.)
Henry Mock
Peter Bixler (excluded)
Briant (Col.)
Elizabeth Algier

Dismissed
1834
1834
35
36
1837
38
Daniel Hite
Katharine Koontz
Peggy Newman
1842
July

1833
John Koontz

Jane Koontz

Dismissed by letter
Thomas Crawford
Geo. W. Spitler
Samuel Grove & Mary
his wife
Susan Foster

36
1842
since 1834
1835
1840
Nov. 9, 1844

Wm. Christie
Chloe Crawford
Wesley Spitler
George Newman & wife
Joseph Mumaw

Isaac (?) Clement
Ann Kebens
Nov. 9, 1844

Elizabeth Aliger

Mill Creek Church Minute Book beginning 1809
p4—tabulation lists—one column

Discharged by letter

Thomas Crawford
since 1834
Geo. W. Spitler
1835
Samuel Grove & Mary

Wm. Christie
Chloe Crawford
Wesley Spitler
George Newman & wife
Joseph Mumaw

Isaac (?) Clement
Ann Kebens
Nov. 9, 1844

Elizabeth Aliger

Mill Creek Church Minute Book—p5 of tabulation lists—triple column

"Received by letter"

Robert Mauck
Jno. M. Smith
Christina Shaver
George Newman
John Gatewood
Thomas Lawler
Robert Garnett
John Brandon
Edward Holmes
Mary Keyser

1837
1841
1847—Feb.
1837
since 1827
since 1831
since 1832
1833
1834
35
1837

Isaac Clement
Anny Koontz
"Dismissed by letter"

since 1823 Asso.

Edney Basye
Samuel Lampton
Wm. Lampton
Susan Huffman
Rebecca Hay
Casper Hess
Jno. W. Smith
Robt. C. Lampton
Jno. Basye
Isaac Hershberger
Benj. Wood
Samuel Odell

Wm. Nunn
Jesse Fleming
Robert C. Lampton
Barbara Stover
Margaret Hershberger
Rachel Wood
Ebrebett Job
Lettitia Atwood
Dinah Wood
Catherine Odell
Sophia Allen
Nancy Trail
Lydia Wood
Rachel Coalman
Mary Atwood
Sally Walker
Letty (Col)
Clary (Col)
Mill Creek Church Minute Book—another page—not dated

"State of the Church"

**Males**

- Morgan Manuck
- Robert Mauck
- Jno. W. Smith
- Wm. M. Crawford
- Christian Bumgardner
- David Ross
- Isaac Hersberger
- Samuel Odell
- Wm. Nunn
- Thomas Lawler
- Benj. Wood
- Robt. C. Lampton
- Geo. Bungardner
- Casper Hess
- George Koontz

**Females**

- Susan Koontz, d. Jan. 46 —— Job
- Susan Musselman
- Mary Grimsley
- Barbara Varner
- Rebecca Hay
- Mary Brumback
- Mary Prince
- Susan Hite, d. Jan. 46 — Catherine Odell

**Reuben Aleshire**

- Morgan Mauck
- Emilia Grigsby
- Susan Decker
- Anna Algier
- Hannah Strickler
- Elizabeth Rosenberger
- Susan Hollensworth
- Barbara Strickler
- Amacia Levock
- Hannah Lampton
- Sally Martin
- Mary Spiter
- Eleanor Jeffries
- Mrs. —— Heisel
- Barbara Stover
- Chloe Crawford
- Lucy Jenkins
- Susan Newman
- Mary Ross
- Sarah Walker
- Mary Hersberger
- Dinah Wood
**MASSANUTTEN**

Rachel Colman  
Rachel Wood  
Lydia Wood

with or  
Blacks (prop. of)  
Tom (prop. of F. Edg)  
Robert

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Age/Year</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Letitia</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clary</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aaron (Kibliger's)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gabriel (at Brubakers)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rich Chunn</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Removed by Death**

- George Ailshire, d. Apr. 4, 1863, age 75 plus
- Elizabeth Tobin, d. Apr. 11, 1864, age 67 plus
- Abraham Spilmer, d. Jan. 29, 1865, age 76 plus
- Sarah Aleshire, d. Mar. 19, 1866, age 66 plus
- Cassy Burner, d. Mar. 20, 1867, age 56 plus
- Nancy Wilson, d. Apr. 6, 1867, age 64
- Mary E. Miller d. Apr. 6, 1867, age 19
- Susan Hite, d. Jan. 9, 1869, age 88
- Barbara Yowell, d. Jul. 8, 1869, age 68
- Barbara Jobe, d. Sep. 16, 1869 cir. 85
- Mary Cullers, d. Nov. 13, 1869, cir. 75
- Catherine Brubaker, d. Apr. 10, 1870, cir. 86
- Margaret Manck d. May 31, 1870, cir. 70
- Mary A. Ruffner d. May 15, 1871, cir. 48
- Martin V. Miller, d. Feb. 3, 1872, cir. 72
- Emanual D. Strickler, d. May 28, 1872, age 57
- Catherine Coontz, d. May 28, 1872, age 69
- Daniel Koontz, Jul. 17, 1872, age 72
- Joshua Jennings, d. Aug. 14, 1872, age 72
- Thomas Wilson, d. Jan. 26, 1872, age 80
- Susan Bixler, d. Apr. 16, 1872, age 73
- Barbara Rothgeb, d. Dec. 31, 1873, age 35
- Amanda A. Yowell, d. Mar. 5, 1874, age 35
- Jno. A. Burner, d. Jul. 31, 1874, age 49
- Henry Mauck, d. Apr. 4, 1875, age 71
- Jno. Bixler, d. abt. Jul. 1874
- David Koontz, d. Jul. 4, 1875, age 70
- Mary Rinehart, d. Apr. 1876, age 80
- Lucy Fletcher d. June 2, 1876, unknown
- Joel Mauck, d. July 26, 1876, age 82
- Mary Spilster, d. Feb. 1, 1878

*State of the Church—Dec. 8, 1867—Male Members* *

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Age</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Joel Mauck</td>
<td>1825</td>
<td>7-26-76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>David Koontz</td>
<td>1825</td>
<td>7-4-75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daniel Koontz</td>
<td>Mar. 11, 1826</td>
<td>Jul. 17, 1872</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>John Bixler</td>
<td>Sep. 8, 1822</td>
<td>Jul. 1874</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Henry Mauck</td>
<td>d. Jun. 4-74</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* The first date is the date when the person was received into the church, evidently.
Daniel Kite (Hite) Sep. 9, 1838 d. 1876
John N. Koontz, Jul. 9, 1842
Gideon C. Brubaker, May 11, 1844
Reuben Dadisman, Sep. 13, 1845, d. 1877
Daniel C. Brubaker, Aug. 10, 1845, d. 1880
Noah Painter, Oct. 12, 1850
Thomas Wilson, Oct. 17, 1850, d. 1873 or 73, Aug. 14
Joshua Jennings, Nov. 13, 1858-d. 8-14-72
Abraham Painter
Price Conly, Jun. 9, 1855
Joseph Peterson, 11-10-65 dis. let.-76
Abraham Hite, May 17—May 13, 1866
James T. Koontz, 1867—dis. let.-82
Reuben Ruffner, May 11, 1867
Peter Long, May 11, 1867
Emanuel D. Strickler, 5-12-67-d. 5-28-72
John B. Ruffner, 5-12-67
Martin S. Beaver, 5-12-67-dis. let. Aug.-73
Peter S. Miller, 6-8-67-dis. let. -72
John H. Menifee, 6-8-67
Geo. T. Wilson, 6-10-67
Samuel G. Winkler, 6-10-67
John Painter 8-10-67 -d.-83
Joseph T. Strickler 9-7 -67
Joshua Ruffner 9-7-67
Christian Burner 9-7-67
Andrew J. Brubaker, Nov. 9, 1867
Isaac B. Strickler, 6-10-68 -d. 1880
John Halterman, 9-12-68 -d. 1880
Philip McInturff, 1-9-69 -d. 1886
Philip Long, 7-11-69
John A. Burner, 7-11-69 -d. 1874

Female Members

Susan Hite, 6-10-15 d. 6-9-69
Mary Spitler, 4-10-24 d. 2-1-78
Barbara Sole (?), d. 9-16-69
Polly Mauck, d. 5-31-70
Barbara Yowell, d. 7-8-69
Rebecca Hite
Elizabeth Koontz, 10-8-25
Phebe Shenk
Mary Rinehart
Nancy Corbin
Eleanor Judd
Elizabeth Ganes, d. 1883
Elizabeth Ganes (repeated)
Mary Cullers 8-7-30 d. 11-13-69
Martha Funkhouser
Susan Bixler
Catherine Koontz 1838
Rebecca Buswell 3-8-45 dis. let 68
Christian Dadisman 9-13-45
Ann Judd 9-11-53
Sarah Johnson 5-12-55
Mary Koontz 6-9-55
Formasanta Koontz 9-14-56
Dianah Yowell 9-14-56
Lucy Fletcher 2- -59
Elizabeth Jennings 11-13-58
Adaline Kaufman 1-7-00
Dinah Hite 3-15-59
Rebecca Manck 9-10-64 d. 12-12-79
Catherine Peterson 8-12-63
Catherine Rothgeb 5-13-67
Mary I. Dadisman 5-13-67
Barbara E. Brubaker 5-11-67
Susan E. Rothgeb 5-11-67
Mary Ann Miller 5-12-67
Elizabeth Miller 5-12-67
Ellizabeth B. Modesitt 6-8-67
Mary Ann Menifee 6-8-67
Harriet V. Wilson 6-10-67
Susan F. Yates 6-10-67
Euphemia Coffman 6-10-67
Susan Strickler 6-10-67
Barbara Ann Rothgeb 6-10-67
Ann L. Mauck 6-10-67
Susan Painter 7-13-67
Betsy Ann Ruffner 9-7-67
Sarah I. Strickler 9-7-67
Amanda E. L., M. A. Rothgeb 9-7-67
Mary Brubaker 9-7-67
Frances L. Coffman 9-7-67
Catherine Brubaker 11-9-67 d. 1870
Mary Caroline Winkler 11-9-67
Josephine 11-9-67
Elizabeth Strickler 12-7-67 Joins New Market
Mary Catherine Rothgeb 12-8-67
Mary Ann Ruffner 12-11-68
Rachel Rebecca Link 12-11-68
Mary Hite 2-8-68
THE LURAY CAVE

Discovered in 1878

When the Indians roamed over this beautiful valley this cave was; when Prince Massanutten followed the chase and Princess Shenandoah sat in her quiet tepee by Massanutten’s sparkling waters this cave was; probably before human feet pressed the sandy loam in these river bends this cave was; probably when prehistoric animals dragged their slimy lengths over the young earth this cave was in the forming. The Indians knew of this cave.

When the first white settlers came to this country there was a cave near the present Luray Caverns and on the same hill about a mile west of Luray and not far from the Massanutten Patent on land first patented or at least early occupied by Peter Ruffner, the ancestor of the well known Ruffner family of Virginia. This has long been known as the old cave, and earlier as Ruffner’s Cave. Kercheval writing in about 1830 calls it Luray Cave. It had a large opening, was easily accessible, and, being open to all comers,
it has long since been despoiled of most of its beauty of which it was at one time possessed.

In August, 1878, Mr. Andrew Campbell with one or two others began to explore the vicinity of the old cave for the possible existence of a larger cave and discovered the present Luray Caverns on August 13, of that year.

In skeleton gorge was found a human female skeleton covered with about three quarters of an inch of drip-stone. This skeleton was removed and placed in the Smithsonian Institute in Washington where it can be seen at any time. In another part of the cave was found the print of a human foot clothed in a moccasin apparently, certainly not in a shoe. This was also covered with about the same amount of drip-stone.

The Indians certainly knew of the old cave and this would indicate that they knew of the new cave. Why did not our ancestors bury their dead in these caverns as Abraham was buried in the cave of Machpelah! Then we would not have so much trouble to find the spot of their last resting place. If the first settler had been buried in a cave of this nature his remains would now be hermetically sealed in a solid stone or crystalline sarcophagus, probably a half inch or more in thickness and without the cost of a single penny. He would have been gradually wrapped in a garment of God’s own making. His tomb instead of decaying would become firmer and stronger with the years. Why not make one of these numerous caverns a sacred Walhalla?

There are forty rooms open to visitors in the Luray caverns. Nine thousand people have entered the caverns in a single day. On one occasion twelve trains of twelve cars each brought the visitors from Pennsylvania to the caverns at one time.

The largest caves known are in America and of these caves exhibited to the public, the Mammoth in Kentucky is the largest, Wyandott in Indiana is the second in size and Luray Cave is third.

Hovey’s celebrated American Caverns, published by Clark & Sons, Cincinnati, now out of print but obtainable in any library, has two chapters on the Luray Caverns.

The Encyclopaedia Britannica—1890—says; “The stalactitic display (of Luray Caverns) exceeds that of any other cavern known, and there is hardly a square yard on the walls or ceiling that is not thus ornamented.” This article is lengthy and includes a survey or map of the caverns.

Extract from the same work in 1911 edition; “A unique and highly successful experiment merits mention, by which the cool
pure air of Luray caverns is forced through all the rooms of Limair Sanatorium erected in 1901, by Mr. T. C. Northcott, President of the Luray Caverns Corporation, on the summit of Cave Hill. Tests made for several successive years, by means of culture media and sterile plates, demonstrated the perfect bacteriologic purity that served as natural filters, then further cleansed by floating over the transparent pools and springs, and finally supplied to the inmates of the sanatorium.”

For a full description, see an article by Dr. G. L. Hunner, of Johns Hopkins University, Popular Science Monthly, for April, 1904.

Mr. Northcott is not now operating the sanatorium but occupies it as his residence. On the hottest days in summer he can keep his home cool by means of the cave air and in winter the air assists in keeping the house at an even temperature. He tells me that the cave air will cure hayfever immediately.

**SHENANDOAH VALLEY COUNTIES**

In the dim unknown sometime, somewhere when the world was young, Prince Massanutten sang love’s old sweet song, wooed and won Princess Shenandoah. Their children are as follows:

1. Augusta, born 1738.
2. Frederick, born 1738.
   twins
   twins
5. Rockingham, born 1777.
6. Rockbridge, born 1777.
   twins
10. Clarke, born 1836.
    twins
11. Highland, born 1847.

Rockbridge, Bath, Highland and Alleghany are not, strictly speaking, counties of the Shenandoah. The Shenandoah Valley, Inc. has incorporated them. All these counties are in Virginia.
except Berkeley and Jefferson which are in West Virginia and
border on the Potomac.

There were 13 tribes in Israel, there were 13 colonies in Ameri­
ca, and there are 13 counties in the Shenandoah. It will be noted
that there are also four pair of twins in the above family.

FORMATION OF COUNTIES *

1720 77 Spotsylvania † & Brunswick.

PREAMBLE: “that the frontiers towards the high mountains are
exposed to danger from the Indians and the late settlements of the
French on the westward of the said mountains.”

Spotsylvania was to have one Parish, St. George, and the citizens
were to be free from levies for ten years.

“Because foreign protestants may not understand English readily,
if any such shall entertain a minister of their own, they and their
tithables shall be free for ten years, from the 1st day of May 1721.”
This clause had reference to the Germans of Germania no doubt.

“Five Hundred Pounds for a church, court-house, prison, pillory,
and stocks, etc.”

“One Hundred Pounds to be distributed in arms and amunition,
among the persons as shall hereafter go to seat the said counties,
that is, to each Christian tithable, one firelock, musket, one socket,
bayonet fitted thereto, one cartouch box, eight pounds bullet, two
pounds powder until the whole One Thousand Pounds be laid out
etc.”

Boundary:

“Enacted, Spotsylvania County bounds upon Snow Creek up to the
mill, thence by a south-west line to the river North-Anna, then up the
said river as far as convenient and thence by a line to be run over the
high mountains to the river on the north-west side thereof, so as to in­
clude the northern passage thro' the said mountains, thence down the
said river until it comes against the head of Rappahanock, thence by
a line to the head of Rappahannock river and down that river to the
mouth of Snow Creek which tract of land from the 1st of May, 1721,
shall become a county, by the name of Spotsylvania County.”

The beginning line is no doubt the present south-west line of
Spotsylvania County. The line went up the N. Anna, the northern
boundary of Louisa, to Albemarle probably and then by a straight line
now the northern border of that County across the mountains so as to
include Swift Run Gap, the “Northern Passage” likely, then down the

* Page refers to Hening's Statutes. Spotsylvania, Orange, Frederick and Augusta
were mother counties to an empire west of the Blue Ridge. I give extracts from the
Acts creating them.
† From Essex and other Counties.
Shenandoah to the mouth of the North Fork of the Shenandoah and across the Blue Ridge to the head of the Rappahannock, the present boundary between Rappahannock and Fauquier Counties.

Process to run into Spotsylvania until Courts established, from Essex, King & Queen, and King William in like manner process from Prince George to run into Brunswick.

Date Page
1720—95—King George from Richmond.
1720—95—Hanover formed from New Kent.
1727—240—Caroline formed from Essex, King and Queen, and King Wm.
1727—240—Goochland from Henrico.
1730—303—Prince Wm. formed from Stafford and King Wm.
1732—355—Part Surry and Isle of Wight added to Brunswick.
1734—450—Orange from Spotsylvania.

Established as of Jan. 1, 1735, citizens to be relieved of levies for three years on the Shenando. The county was to be divided on a line between the two Parishes: “Between the Parish of St. George, and the Parish of St. Mark; and that part of the said County, which is now the parish of St. George, remain, and be called, and known by the name of Spotsylvania County; and all the territory of land adjoining to and above the said line, bounded southerly by the line of Hanover County, northerly by the grant of the lord Fairfax and westerly by the utmost limits of Virginia."

1734—467—Amelia formed from Prince George and part of Brunswick.
1738—78—Augusta and Frederick from Orange County.

PREAMBLE: "Whereas great numbers of people have settled themselves of late, upon the rivers Sherrando, Cohongorunton, and Opeckon, and the branches thereof, on the northwest side of the Blue Ridge Mountains, whereby the strength of this colony, and its security upon the frontiers, and his majesty's revenue of quitrents, are like to be much increased and augmented; for giving encouragement to such as shall think fit to settle there."

All the territory of Orange west of the Blue Ridge to the utmost limits of Virginia was separated from Orange County and erected into two new counties, the dividing “line to be run from the head spring of Hedgeman river to the head spring of the river Potowmack;”

1742—85—Part of King and Queen added to Caroline.
1742—207—Fairfax from Prince Wm.
1742—208—Louisa from Hanover.
1744—266—Albemarle from Goochland.
1745—383—Lunenburg from Brunswick.
1752—252—Halifax from Lunenburg.
1752—254—Dinwiddie from Prince George.
1753—376—Hampshire from Frederick and Augusta. *
1753—379—Amelia divided.
1753—380—Prince Edward formed.
1753—381—Bedford from Lunenburg.
1753—384—Sussex from Surry.
1754—411—Bedford, part of Albemarle & Lunenburg added to.
1757—148—Loudoun from Fairfax.
1759—311—Fauquier from Prince Wm.
1761—419—Buckingham and Amherst from Albemarle.
1761—419—Amherst and Buckingham.
1761—420—Albemarle, part of Louisa added to.
1762—620—Caroline, part of King & Queen added to.
1758—179—Augusta County militia.
1764— 41—Charlotte & Mecklenburg from Lunenburg.
1764— 41—Mecklenburg & Charlotte from Lunenburg.
1766—205—Pittsylvania from Halifax.
1766—208—Exchange between New Kent & James City.
1769—395—Botetourt from Augusta.
1769—405—Isle of Wight, part of Nansemond added to. (10 Geo. III).
Part of York in Williamsburg added to.
1769—418—James City for the purpose of erecting a C. House.
1772—597—Berkeley & Dunmore from Frederick.
1772—597—Dunmore & Berkeley from Frederick.
1772—600—Finns castle formed from Botetourt.
1772—601—Stafford & King Geo., to fix line between.
1772—602—Isle of Wight, part of Nansemond added to.
1776—244—King George & Stafford, boundaries between altered.
1776—241—Henry from Pittsylvania.
1776—257—Washington, Kentucky & Montgomery from Fincastle.
1776—257—Montgomery, Kentucky & Washington from Fincastle.
1776—257—Fincastle extinct.
1776—262—West Augusta, boundary between Augusta etc.
1776—262—Ohio, Yohogania, & Monongalia from Dist. of W. Augusta.
1776—262—Yohogania, Ohio & Monongalia from Dist. of W. Augusta.
1776—262—Monongalia, Ohio, & Yohogania from Dist. of W. Augusta.
1777—322—Powhatan from Cumberland.
1777—325—Fluvanna from Albemarle.
1777—327—Lunenburg, part of Charlotte added to.
1777—420—Hampshire, part of Augusta added to.
1777—420—Rockingham from Augusta.
1777—420—Greenbrier from Botetourt & Montgomery.
1777—421—Rockbridge from Augusta and Botetourt.

* Line between Frederick and Augusta moved south to the Fairfax line by same Act.
MASSANUTTEN

Date  Page.
1777—424—Shenandoah becomes the name of Dunmore.
1777—432—King Geo., part of added to Westmoreland & vice versa.
1778—532—Illinois County formed west of the Ohio adjacent to the Mississippi, etc.
1778—559—Cumberland, part of Buckingham added to.
1780—114—Monongalia, part of Augusta added to.
1780—315—Jefferson, Fayette & Lincoln from Kentucky County.
1780—315—Fayette, Jefferson & Lincoln from Kentucky County.
1780—315—Lincoln, Jefferson & Fayette from Kentucky County.
1780—351—Monongalia, another part of Augusta added to.
1780—365—Greensville from Brunswick.
1781—447—Campbell from Bedford.
1784—366—Harrison from Monongalia.
1784—499—Nelson from Jefferson.
1784—69—Southampton, part of Nansemond added to.
1784—70—Franklin from Bedford & Henry.
1784—74—Botetourt, part of Rockbridge added to.
1784—86—Hardy from Hampshire.
1784—89—Barbour from Fayette.
1785—110—Russell from Washington.
1785—114—Yohogania, remnant of added to Ohio.
1785—116—Mercer & Madison from Lincoln.
1785—116—Madison & Mercer from Lincoln.
1786—393—Randolph from Harrison.
1787—596—Greensville, part of Brunswick added to.
1787—597—Hampshire, part of Hardy added to.
1787—637—Pendleton formed from Augusta, Hardy & Rockingham.
1788—658—Mason from Barbour.
1788—663—Woodford from Fayette.
1788—670—Kanawha from Greenbrier & Montgomery.
1788—723—Nottoway from Amelia.
1789—76—Wythe from Montgomery.
1789—77—Montgomery, part of Botetourt added to.
1790—160—Patrick from Henry.
1790—161—Matthews, from Gloucester.
1790—165—Bath from Augusta, Botetourt & Greenbrier.
1791—291—Henry, part of added to Patrick.
1792—556—Lee from Russell.
1792—558—Madison from Culpeper.
1792—559—Grayson from Wythe.
1792—561—Nottoway line between it and Amelia fixed.
1799—217—Tazewell from Wythe & Russell.
1800—203—Wood, part of Kanawha added to.
1801—Jefferson on Potomac—see 1780 in Ky.
1820—27—Morgan from Berkeley and Hampshire.
1822—Alleghany from Bath, Botetourt and Monroe.
1831—136—Logan.
OH, FOR THE MOUNTAINS!

By W. W. Stickley *

Oh, for the mountains! Flat, too near,
The scant horizon frets me here; ♦
In vain my eyes turn to the sky
For their accustomed prospects high.

Oh, for the mountains! Not for me
The level prairie or the sea,
Where change to the expectant view
Affords no panoramas new.

Oh, for the mountains! Up and down
The roads go there; the country, town
And wilderness, all in one look;
The whole world like an open book.

The mountains are rough and steep and high,
But they lift men up, and they cheer the eye
With fancy's visions of what may be
In the far-off mountains of eternity.

I dream of the mountains on winter nights
When the freezing world seems dead and the lights
Of the sky are hid by the hurrying clouds
As they bear aloft the long white shrouds

* By permission of Mr. W. W. Stickley, the Author, who was born among the mountains of Virginia. Copyrights reserved.
♦ The first thing I did when I came to New York twenty years ago was to look around to see whether there were any mountains near the city.
That fall and cover the trees and grass
And warm the roots so the sap can pass
When the sun returns to wake and bring
New resurrection in the spring.

Stony and bare the mountain seems,
But still there is soil, and pools and streams
Of rain-water under the rocks; high land
Is as rich as any; loam and sand,

Soft beds of moss, and tangled vines,
Close underwood, tall oaks and pines,
And all the forest tribe abound
In that uneven, hampered ground.

There's laurel brush for the shivering deer,
And dens in the rocks for the wolf and bear;
The high broom grass lasts all the year,
And dry leaves drift deep everywhere.

There are trees that all the pheasants know
Where wild grapes hang on the vine till spring,
And the turkey digs from under the snow
The huckleberry bush with toe and wing.

In his bed of wood-dust, soft and warm,
The squirrel sleeps in his hollow tree,
Which bends and moans in the winter storm,
But spares him a fall or a reveille. *

The rivers join, but the mountains divide;
There may be nations side by side,
With only a lofty wedge between,
Yet each to each unknown, unseen,
As Eskimo to Hottentot.
Too great the labor, men climb not
The tedious, tilted sheds whose tops
May tower over clouds; where stops
The haughty river, till its flood,
Rolled back, to find itself a road,
Rears on the land a sea, far spread,
Whose bounding waves, on sloping bed,
Pressed on by driving winds, rise to
The height of alps and overflow

* Among soldiers this word is pronounced rev-al-ee.
The highland ranges in their path.
Fierce in their arrogance and wrath,
They leap like lions on the crest;
Their blows and fury give no rest;
They shake and tear the granite wall,
Burst through the rip of frost* and fall†
And crushed beneath the grind and lift
Of swirling hills of water, drift‡
And stone. The rent dam crumbles and
Gives way; for leagues beyond the land
Is sunk beneath the watery hosts,
Which, quickly passing, reach the coasts
Of ocean and subsidence. Far
Behind they leave, cut through the bar
Of adamant that held them back,
In cataclysmic mad attack,
A wide crevasse, whose jagged sides
And dizzy crags are bounds and guides
For the great stream that did not know
Where it was bent, which way to go.
Now at their base it flows in peace,
Its susurrations never cease.**

*  *  *  *

Can there be a Heaven a fairer sight
Than a mountain of snow, hushed, still and white,
With a forest of trees all changed to ice
By a bath of sleet, Aeolus' device,
That turns all their branches and twigs and stems
Into crystals that mirror the hues of all gems?

*  *  *  *

In death on a mountain I will sleep content,
And the mountain shall be my monument.

*  *  *  *

Commenced in 1912; finished September 25, 1924.

* Water freezing in crevices, etc.
† Hydrostatic paradox.
‡ Ice, carrying earth, trees, bowlders, etc. The idea is that the gap was cut in the spring when the ice went out, the ridges of ice probably being larger and heavier than the mountain itself.
** The noise made by even a small river in running where there are no other sounds can be heard for half a mile or mile.
“They were by nature a whole hearted folk, who could endure mistreatment, with long untrimmed beards, with peculiar clothing, heavy shoes, which were very heavily ironed with heel taps and large nails. They were very zealous to serve God with prayer, reading and otherwise, were simple in all their actions like lambs and doves...Because they had lived in the mountains of Switzerland, far from villages and cities, and had had but little contact with other people, their speech was very awkward and uncultured.”

Translated by Dr. John S. Flory of Bridgewater College from the German as found on page 176 “German and Swiss Settlements of Pennsylvania” by Kuhns-ref. Muller p. 271. The German is as follows:


Since it would be interesting to know how many descendants there are in the United States of these Massanutten Settlers I am offering to compile a list of all the descendants. In order to do this I will have to have the assistance of all these descendants.

I suggest, therefore, that each descendant send in his name and address and give his line back to some one of the early Massanutten settlers. I will file these in alphabetical lists and publish same later. It will be a roster of Massanutten. With the information should be included the occupation or other interesting fact, in regard to himself or any one of his ancestors.

I further suggest that we organize a society known as the “Massanutten Society”. There are many things that a society of this character could do.
AN EQUINOCTIAL SUNSET

Stand on the White House bridge at sun-down on September 22d and the sun will smile good-night to you thru this dimple in Massanutten's cheek. The chariot of the sun rolls along the top of Massanutten in a northerly direction until December 22d, when it turns again south, and falling into the gap on the 21st of March continues on south until June 21st when it turns and rolls toward the polar star until it drops into the gap in September. And thus for eons of thousands of years it has made its circuit from north to south and back again, smiling good-night thru this beauty spot to the dwellers in the wigwams for how many years no one knows. It smiled to the first settlers and it smiles to us with the same bewitching smile. Men may come and men may go but the sun smiles on forever.

THE MUSE OF HISTORY

The Muse of History is a jealous dame and very reticent. She will only disclose her valuable information to those who labor hard and never tire. She usually will not speak until some one makes an error and then she will with rage tell the whole truth which she has been so loath to divulge. I hope, therefore, if I have made a mistake that it will, at least, inspire this sedate and reluctant dame to make the necessary corrections and tell the whole story, and at the same time be not too severe with her humble but devoted devotee, who has been bold to offer this poorly written sketch for her candid and considerate perusal.

MIZPAH